

A

# COMPARATIVE GRAMMAR

OF THE

## FRENCH, ITALIAN, SPANISH, AND PORTUGUESE LANGUAGES.

BY EDWIN A. NOTLEY.

---

This Work, in a Tabular form, much facilitates the acquirement of any one of these Languages,  
and for the study of two or more, the advantage is still greater.

---

*A COPIOUS VOCABULARY, ALPHABETICALLY ARRANGED, IS APPENDED.*

LONDON:  
TRÜBNER & CO., 60 PATERNOSTER ROW.  
1868.

EDINBURGH : PRINTED BY BALLANTYNE AND COMPANY, PAUL'S WORK.

# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE		PAGE
PREFACE, . . . . .	v	SUBSTANTIVES—	
ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION, . . . . .	xi	Formation of the Plural, . . . . .	20
ARTICLES—		Of the Gender, . . . . .	26
Definite Article Declined, . . . . .	2	Augmentatives . . . . .	32
Indefinite Article Declined, . . . . .	4	Diminutives, . . . . .	32
Agreement with Noun, . . . . .	6	Compound Substantives, . . . . .	34
In a General Sense, . . . . .	6	Plural of Compound Substantives, . . . . .	34
In a Particular Sense, . . . . .	8	ADJECTIVES—	
In a Partitive Sense, . . . . .	8	Formation of the Feminine, . . . . .	38
Before Countries, &c., . . . . .	10	Formation of the Plural, . . . . .	40
Before Nouns of Weight, &c., . . . . .	12	Degrees of Comparison, . . . . .	42
Before Names of Deities, Titles, &c., . . . . .	14	Comparative of Superiority, . . . . .	42
Before Names of Celebrities, . . . . .	14	Comparative of Inferiority, . . . . .	44
Before Numeral Adjectives, . . . . .	16	Comparative of Equality, . . . . .	46
Before Two or more Adjectives, . . . . .	16	The Superlative Degree, . . . . .	46
Before Possessive Pronouns, . . . . .	18	Numeral Adjectives, . . . . .	50
With Adverbs of Quantity, . . . . .	18	Days of the Month, . . . . .	58
With an Exclamation, . . . . .	20	“All” with Numeral, . . . . .	60
		The Hour, &c., . . . . .	60

## CONTENTS.

ADJECTIVES, *continued*—

Of Age,	.
Once, Twice, &c.,	.
Concord with the Noun,	.
Place of Adjectives,	.
Adjectives of Dimension,	.

## PRONOUNS—

Table of Personal Pronouns,	.
Nominative Case,	.
Accusative Case,	.
Dative Case,	.
With the Infinitive Mood,	.
With the Imperative Mood,	.
It, They, Them,	.
Possessive Pronouns Conjunctive,	.
Possessive Pronouns Disjunctive,	.
Demonstrative Pronouns,	.
Relative Pronouns,	.
Indefinite Pronouns,	.

## VERBS—

Conjugation of "To Have,"	.
" To Be,"	.
" Regular Verbs,	.
" Irregular Verbs.	.
Moods and Tenses,	.
Indicative Present,	.
Imperfect and Preterite Definite,	.
Preterite Indefinite,	.
Future Tense,	.
Conditional Mood,	.
Imperative Mood,	.
Subjunctive Mood,	.
Infinitive Mood,	.
Participle Present,	.

VERBS, *continued*—

Participle Past,	.
" with Verb <i>To be</i> ,	.
" with Verb <i>To have</i> ,	.
" with Pronominal Verbs,	.
" with Unipersonal Verbs,	.
" with Infinitive,	.
Passive Verb,	.
Neuter Verb,	.
Reflective Verb,	.
Unipersonal, or Impersonal Verbs,	.
Negative form of Conjugation,	.
Interrogative form of Conjugation,	.
Agreement of the Verb with its Subject,	.
Agreement of the Verb with its Subject in the form of a Collective Noun or Adverb of Quantity,	.

## ADVERBS—

Of Time,	.
Of Place,	.
Of Order,	.
Of Quality and Comparison,	.
Of Doubt,	.
Of Affirmation and Negation,	.
Formation from Adjectives,	.
Place of the Adverb,	.
Affirmative,	.
Negatives,	.
Observations on various Adverbs,	.

## PREPOSITIONS—

Remarks on various Prepositions,	.
Place of the Preposition,	.
Repetition,	.

## CONJUNCTIONS,

VOCABULARY,	.
-------------	---

## PAGE

256

256

258

262

262

264

266

268

270

270

272

274

276

280

284

286

288

290

292

292

294

296

296

296

300

304

310

312

314

316

321

## P R E F A C E.

---

THIS work, though on a less comprehensive scale, was commenced some years past, solely for the purpose of the author's enlarging his own acquaintance with two of the languages treated, and of his acquiring the other two more easily by comparison—all the four having been of real utility, if not of absolute necessity, in his avocations, not only in the countries where the languages are spoken, but also in England. The course of instruction now imparted to others is, therefore, purely of a practical nature, based upon long personal experience, and adopted in preference to many of the systems which are advocated on the study of foreign languages. Far from wishing to pass invidious remarks upon other grammars, or presumptuously to assert any superiority in this, the author must be allowed to state the plan pursued by him, and wherein he differs from others, leaving the master or pupil to select the method most in accordance with his own opinion. In the first place, grammar, as an abstract science, is not here taught. Philological technicalities and remarks upon the origin of words, however interesting to some few, are suppressed, the main object being not to swell a volume, but to give only that which is really necessary. It must not be considered an imperfection to have departed from the generally-adopted method of having a separate portion

of the grammar devoted to *Syntax*, which plan invariably necessitates the repetition of rules already given in some other methodical division of the work, and cannot be of any real practical use; for, as “syntax” (to quote one author) “is a convenient disposition of the different parts of speech among themselves,”—meaning, though obscurely, the right construction of a sentence,—why separate the rules which govern that disposition from observations on any other peculiarities in the part of speech, such as the variations of form on account of gender or number?

It is also deemed unnecessary to define the names of the different parts of speech, such as what a relative pronoun is, and why it is so called: the rules and examples will at once show all this.

The real, and, without doubt, the most useful object aimed at, is to indicate the principal features in the *grammatical construction of the French, Italian, Spanish, and Portuguese languages*: this is endeavoured to be explained by a collection of all the most necessary rules, each one illustrated by an example or examples taken from classic writings, from newspapers, and from any modern literature showing the prevailing phraseology, and all translated into English. As French is the most universally known, its rules are placed in the first column, and those of the other languages are compared with it and with one another; so that, whatever language may be under study, the rule in the French division should be first read. Where it differs from the others is shown in the parallel columns.

In this manner a knowledge of more than one language can be acquired at the same time, while the real principles of grammar are more easily comprehended, for they are the same in all tongues, although different idioms exist, and these are learned only by actual practice.

Every language abounds in idioms, a mere fraction of which could fill a volume, yet grammars devote

some pages to formal lists which a student would as soon think of committing to memory as he would attempt to remember all the proverbs of Sancho Panza. It is a great mistake to suppose that a mere grammar is sufficient to teach a pupil to speak and write a foreign language unaided by his own efforts and by those of his tutor, and that the publishing a quantity of idiomatical expressions adds value to a work of this description. Long lists of exceptions and irregularities are next to useless, such as in verbs, of which the Spanish language alone contains upwards of *five hundred*; also of participles. A good dictionary, which is indispensable, contains this and other information which is often unnecessarily inserted in a grammar. Nevertheless, as it has been observed that the more common or necessary may be the use of a verb, the more it is subject to irregularity of inflection; and that, consequently, verbs which are irregular in one language are, for the most part, irregular in others of like derivation, several are here conjugated and arranged alphabetically as regards the English equivalent. On adverbs, (and the same observation might apply to prepositions,) Corticelli remarks : "Molti sono gli avverbj, e più che molti i modi avverbiali della lingua toscana, nè sarebbe senza noja l'annoverargli qui." Still, for the sake of those who are studying more than one of the four languages, a table is given of one hundred adverbs properly classified, and each classification in alphabetical order as regards the English word.

Interjections are not alluded to : they are *too soon* learned without the aid of a preceptor.

As an important, if not the first necessary step in the acquirement of language, is naturally an acquaintance with the names of objects, a copious vocabulary is appended. It consists of about two thousand five hundred words in most common use in each language. The student is recommended to learn them by degrees, giving to the task if only a quarter of an hour every day. It will assist him in his

reading, which, under the guidance of a grammar, and with the assistance of a good dictionary, is by far the most successful, if not the only means of becoming familiar with the idioms of languages. One cannot read too much, especially works containing colloquial phraseology, such as dramatic writings. Newspapers are also great aids, not only because they are, as a rule, correctly written, but because they necessarily adopt expressions in constant use. This cannot be said of poetry, which luxury is too frequently placed in the hands of pupils before they are enabled to spell out an ordinary sentence in prose. The time that is sometimes employed in construing one canto of Dante or of Camōens would almost suffice for any intelligent learner to translate the whole of Gil Blas, or the greater part of Goldoni's plays. It has already been hinted that this publication does not pretend to give a complete analysis or a thorough enumeration of all the difficulties which present themselves in the acquirement of a foreign language, but it professes to give rather more than a general outline of study; and the author may be permitted to assert that a knowledge of its contents will give to the learner no mean insight into the construction of the four southern languages. During the time that it has been in preparation and compilation—for, after all, a great part of any grammar must be mere compilation, (you cannot alter the conjugation of the verb *Parler*, to speak, nor the meaning of the numeral adjective *Tre*, three)—it has been observed that professors are teaching one foreign language with the assistance of another, thus practically realising the idea of this work, and adding testimony to the utility of a comparative grammar.

Much care and labour have been bestowed in the endeavour to lessen difficulties which are usually found in comprehending clearly the following points:—The right employment of personal pronouns in the nominative, dative, and accusative cases; the distinct use of the imperfect and preterite tenses indicative;

the peculiarities of the subjunctive mood, especially in the Spanish and Portuguese languages; and the variation of the past participle. These parts of grammar are all capable of being subjected to fixed rules, which cannot be said of the capricious government of prepositions, and of a few other obstacles which are overcome only by reading. Although some few of the rules given do not appear in other books, (for they are formed on the examples themselves,) the greater part are recognised by the following undoubted authorities:—

In the French division, by the “Grammaire Nationale” of Bescherelle frères, (than which, perhaps, a better grammar does not exist in any tongue;) by the “Grammaire des Grammaires,” and others.

In the Italian, by Corticelli, Buommatei, Ciciloni, and Lemmi.

In the Spanish, by the Grammar of the Academy, by F. T. A. Chalumeau de Verneuil, Emanuel del Mar, and others.

Of the Portuguese language there is a very poor collection of grammars. The best that has come under the notice of the author is by F. S. Constancio, written in French, and published in Paris 1849. Although not sufficiently modern, it is well worth the study of those who might desire to compare Portuguese with its Latin origin. Vieyra's appears to be the favourite, in fact, almost the only one generally known; but it has several inaccuracies, some of which are noticed by John Laycock, whose grammar, published in Leeds 1825, is also rather behind the age, for Portuguese has lately undergone some changes which will be remarked upon in the course of this work. There is also a grammar by Mr D'Orsey, published 1860. It possesses some useful notes on the modern style of writing, has plenty of exercises, and is a slight improvement upon Ollendorff. It may be here observed that Portuguese is not

sufficiently studied, in spite of its increasing utility, not so much in respect to literature, but in commercial pursuits. In the immense and flourishing empire of Brazil, where so many of our countrymen are located, it is singular, and at the same time humiliating, to remark how few ever apply themselves to learning the language with any degree of correctness. They appear to rest satisfied with acquiring the kitchen jargon of their nigger servants, learning it in the same manner as it is imparted to a parrot, a courier, or a Levantine barber—that is, by oral instruction only, and in just sufficient quantity to make their wants known. There are, of course, some exceptions, and these experience the value of understanding the construction of the Portuguese language.

The examples which illustrate the rules in this book are mostly from La Bruyère, Bossuet, Lamartine, Napoléon, Boccaccio, Goldoni, Manzoni, Cervantes, La Sage, Urraca, Corticelli, Constancio, Guerini, and others, besides public journals.

Whatever deficiencies may be found here, the author hopes that this small addition to the many educational works daily appearing will at least afford some assistance in the study of modern languages.

## ALPHABET AND PRONUNCIATION.

It must be admitted that without the aid of *oral* instruction, a correct idea of pronunciation cannot be gained. No one by *writing* can teach the nasal sounds of the French *n* and the Portuguese *ã*, the open and close sounds of the Italian *e* and *o*, or the guttural of the Spanish *g* and *j*. Nevertheless, some assistance can be given to the pupil who is obliged to dispense with a master, or who is unable to go where the language is spoken.

It is necessary to explain that in the table of alphabets, the letters which would occupy the blank spaces are pronounced in the same manner as those in the French column, where the equivalent sound is given in English. For instance, *A* in all the languages is sounded like *ah*, or like *a* in *arm*. Where a dash is made, the letter does not exist.

**TABLE OF ALPHABETS.**

	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
A	ah.			
B	bay.		The Spanish B and V have almost the same sound.	
C	say.	tchay.	thay, (as in <i>thane</i> .)	say.
D	day.			
E	a.			
F	eefe.			
G	jay, ( <i>j</i> soft, like <i>s</i> in <i>measure</i> .)	jay, ( <i>j</i> hard.)	hay, ( <i>h</i> guttural.)	jay, (as in French.)
H	ash.	alikah.	arch.	agga.
I	e.			
J	jee, ( <i>j</i> soft.)	ee.	hota, ( <i>h</i> guttural.)	jod, ( <i>j</i> soft as in French.)
K	car.	—		—
L	elle.			
M	emme.			
N	enne.			
O	o.			
P	pay			
Q	ku	coo.	coo.	kay.
R	erre.			
S	esse.			
T	tay.			
U	u, (a sound between oo and you.)	oo.	oo.	oo.
V	vay.		vay, (see letter B.)	
W	—	—	—	—
X	eeks.	—	akis.	shiz.
Y	egrec.	—	eegriega, (pronounced <i>e</i> , like the letter <i>i</i> .)	ipsilon, (pronounced <i>e</i> , like the letter <i>i</i> .)
Z	zaid	dzata	thata, (like <i>tha</i> in <i>thane</i> .)	zay.

## PRONUNCIATION.

## FRENCH.

The Vowels are all pronounced as shown in the Alphabet: *Example*.—*dé* (a thimble or die) is like the English *da* in the word *date*.

The Consonants are pronounced as in English, with certain exceptions noted in following observations:—

*C* before *a, o, u*, is, when marked with the Cedilla (ç,) sounded like *s*; as, *ça* (here) is pronounced like *sar* in the word *sardine*.

*Ch* are sounded like *sh*; as, *chat* (a cat) is pronounced like *shar* in the English word *sharp* (Note a.)

*Ge* and *gi* have scarcely an equivalent sound in English; they are pronounced in French very like *s* in the English word *measure*.

*H* in French is sometimes aspirated, as in English, sometimes silent.

*J* is like *g* in French, before *e* or *i*; *ju* in *injure* (an injury) have almost the same sound as *su* in the English word *measure*.

Note a.—The letter *t* in French is not sounded at the end of a word, except sometimes, for the sake of euphony, before another word beginning with a vowel.

Note b.—There is no letter *k* in the Italian language, the hard *c* and *ch* supplying its place.

## ITALIAN.

} Same.  
} Same.

*C* before *e* and *i* sounds like *ch* in *chest* and in *chin*.  
*See* in Italian are pronounced like *sha* in *shape*, and *sci* like *she*.

*Ch* in Italian are sounded like *k*, or *ca* hard; as, *cheto* (quiet) is pronounced like the word *Cato* (Note b.)

*Ge* and *gi* in Italian have the soft sound of the English *g* in *gem* and *gipsy*.

*Gue* and *gui* sound like *gway*, *gwee*.

*Gua* are sounded like *gwar* or *goo-ah*; as *guardia*, (a guard) is pronounced like *goo-ah-deer*.

} *H* in Italian is silent.

*J* at the beginning or in the middle of a word is pronounced like *e* in English; as *je*, of *jeri*, (yesterday,) sounds like *e-a* spoken briskly; at the end of a word it is pronounced like *ee*.

## PRONUNCIATION.

xiii

### SPANISH.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Same.} \\ \text{Same (Note } a\text{.)} \end{array} \right.$

*C* before *e* and *i* sounds like *th* in *thane* and *thick*.

*Ch*, considered by Spanish grammarians as one distinct letter, have the sound of *ch* in *chest*; as, *chal* (a shawl) is pronounced like *charl* in *Charles*.

*Ge* and *gi* in Spanish have the guttural sound of *h*: no equivalent in English.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Same.} \\ \text{Same.} \end{array} \right.$

*J* in Spanish is always guttural

*N*, (see general remark below.)

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Same.} \\ \text{Same (Note } b\text{.)} \end{array} \right.$

*C* before *a*, *o*, *u*, is sounded (as in French) like *s* when the former is marked with the Cedilla, (ç); as, *caça* (chase) is pronounced like *kah-sah*.

*Ch* are sounded (as in French) like *sh*; as, *charpa* (a scarf) is pronounced like *sharper*.

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Same as French.} \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Same.} \\ \text{Same.} \end{array} \right.$

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Like } j \text{ in French.} \end{array} \right.$

Note *a*.—The *B* and *V* in Spanish have almost the same sound, and are sometimes written one for the other, according to taste, except before the letters *l* and *r*, or at the end of a word or syllable, when *b* must always be used. *S* always has the sound of *s* in the English word *send*.

Note *b*.—*M* and *N* at the beginning of a word or syllable are sounded as in English; otherwise they have a nasal sound, except when the letter *n* is followed by *h* in the same word, when it resembles the *gn* in French.

## PRONUNCIATION.

## FRENCH.

*Qu* are pronounced like *k*.

*X* sounds like *ks*, as in English.

*Z* as in English.

## ITALIAN.

*Qu* in Italian sounds like *kw*; as *quà* (here) is pronounced like *kwar*.

Same as French.

*Z* as in English, but with a hard or soft sound, which cannot be taught by rule.

*General Remarks.*—The liquid sound of *ll* in French corresponds with the *gli* of Italian, (Note *a*.) the *ll* of the Spanish, and the *lh* of the Portuguese, all which are pronounced like *gl* in *seraglio*.

Note *a*.—In the Italian word *negligere*, and a few others, the *g* is sounded hard.

## PRONUNCIATION.

xv

### SPANISH.

- { *Qu*, same as French.
- { Same as French.
- } *Z* in Spanish is sounded like *th* in *thane*.

### PORtUGUESE.

- { *Qu* sound like *k*, except in a few words, such as *quando*, *frequente*, &c., which are pronounced *kwando*, *frequente*, &c.
- { *X* is pronounced like *sh*, except when followed by a consonant, and in a few words, such as *proximo*: in these instances it is pronounced like *ss*.
- } *Z* as in English.

The *gn* in the French word *seigneur* corresponds with the Italian *gn*, the Spanish *ñ*, and the Portuguese *nh*; as, *señor* and *senhor* are pronounced like *senyore*.



---

COMPARATIVE GRAMMAR.

---

## ARTICLES.

A general table is given, showing the manner in which this part of speech is declined. Particular attention should be paid to the Italian method, which varies more than that of the others, for the purpose of perfecting the euphony of the language. Several rules which follow will show that the article is often used by foreigners where it is not expressed in English, and the contrary; also, that where sometimes in English the *indefinite* article is employed, French and others make use of the *definite*. It is not practicable to place together all the

## Definite Article.

## FRENCH.

*Le*, the, before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant or H aspirated.

*La* before a noun, fem. do. do. do.

*L'* before any noun beginning with a vowel or H mute.

*Les* before any plural noun, masc. or fem.

*Du*, of or from the, before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant or H aspirated.

*de la* before a noun, fem. do. do.

*de l'* before any noun beginning with a vowel or H mute.

*des* before any plural noun, masc. or fem.

Note a.—This *s* is called by the Italians "s impura." Corticelli says that *lo* should also be used after the preposition *per*, as *per lo quale*. *Il* is sometimes, though not often, found before *z*.

## ITALIAN.

*Il* before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant.

*La* before a noun, fem. sing., do. do.

*L'* before a vowel or before *e* in the plural.

*Lo* before *s* followed by another consonant (Note a), or before *z*.

*I* before a noun, masc. plural, beginning with a consonant.

*Le* before a noun, fem. pl. do. do.

*Gli* before plurals beginning with a vowel (except *i* which takes *gl'*) or with *s impura* or *z*.

*Del* before a noun, masc. sing.

*della* before a noun, fem. sing.

*dello* before *s impura* or *z*.

*dei* before a noun, masc. pl., beginning with a consonant.

rules where the article ought to be used, or where it may be suppressed, because they vary in the different languages compared.

It must be observed that the article likewise performs the part of a pronoun, in which capacity it is hereafter mentioned.

### Definite Article.

#### SPANISH.

*El*, the, before a noun, masc. sing.

*La* before a noun, fem. sing.

*Lo*, neutral, (for instance, before an adjective used as a substantive.)

*Los* before nouns, masc. plural.

*Las* before nouns, fem. plural.

#### PORtUGUESE.

*o* before a noun, masc. sing.

*a* before a noun, fem. sing.

*os* before a noun, masc. pl.

*as* before a noun, fem. pl.

*Del*, of or from the, before a noun, masc. sing.

*de la* before a noun, fem. sing.

*de lo*, neutral.

*de los* before a noun, masc. pl.

*de las* before a noun, fem. pl.

*Do* before a noun, masc. sing.

*da* before a noun, fem. sing.

*dos* before a noun, masc. pl.

*das* before a noun, fem. pl.

## ARTICLES.

## FRENCH.

*Au*, to or at the, before a noun, masc. sing., beginning with a consonant or H aspirated.

*à la* before a noun, fem. sing. do. do.

*à l'* before any noun beginning with a vowel or H mute.

*aux* before any plural noun, masc. or fem.

## ITALIAN.

*delle* before a noun, fem. pl., beginning with a consonant.

*degli* before plurals beginning with a vowel (except *i* which takes *degl'*) or with *s* impura or *z*.

*al* before a noun, masc. sing.

*alla* before a noun, fem. sing.

*allo* before *s* impura or *z*.

*ai* before a noun, masc. pl., beginning with a consonant.

*alle* before a noun, fem. pl., do. do.

*agli* before plurals beginning with a vowel (except *i* which takes *agl'*) or with *s* impura or *z*.

## Indefinite Article.

*Un*, a or an, before a noun, masc.

*une* before a noun, fem.

*un* before a noun, masc.

*una* before a noun, fem.

*un'* before a noun, fem., beginning with a vowel.

*uno* before a noun, masc., beginning with *s* impura or *z*.

*a un* (or *ad un*) (Note *a*) before a noun, masc.

*a una* (or *ad una*) before a noun, fem.

*a uno* (or *ad uno*) before a noun, masc., beginning with *s* impura or *z*.

Note *a*.—The preposition *a* may add *d* before a vowel, for the sake of euphony.

## ARTICLES.

5

### SPANISH.

*al*, to or at the, before a noun, masc. sing.  
*á la* before a noun, fem. sing.  
*á los* before a noun, masc. pl.  
*á las* before a noun, fem. pl.

### PORTEGUESE.

*ao* before a noun, masc. sing.  
*á (Note a)* before a noun, fem. sing.  
*aos* before a noun, masc. pl.  
*ás* before a noun, fem. pl.

### Indefinite Article.

*un* or *uno*, *a* or *an*, before a noun, masc.  
*una* before a noun, fem.

*um* (Note b) before a noun, masc.  
*uma* before a noun, fem.

*á un*, to or at a or an, before a noun, masc.  
*á una* before a noun, fem.

*a um* before a noun, masc.  
*a uma* before a noun, fem.

Note a.—Observe that *á* (accented) is a combination of the preposition *a* and the article *a*.

Note b.—This article is frequently written with an *h*, as *hum*, *huma*, but not in accordance with modern usage.

## ARTICLES.

## FRENCH.

*d'un*, of or from a or an, before a noun, masc.  
*d'une* before a noun, fem.

## ITALIAN.

*di un* before a noun, masc.  
*di una* before a noun, fem.  
*di uno* before a noun, masc., beginning with s impura  
 or z.

## Agreement with Noun.

1. The article must always agree in gender and number with its noun. } Same.

## Examples.

*Le garçon*      The boy.  
*Les femmes*      The women.

Remark.—The article in French is generally repeated } Same.  
 before every noun.

## Examples.

*Il signor*      The gentleman.  
*Le signore*      The ladies.

## In a General Sense.

2. The article is used before all nouns taken in a general sense, before the names of arts, virtues, vices, metals, &c. } Same.

## Examples.

*L'homme est mortel.*      Man is mortal.  
*Le fer est util.*      Iron is useful.  
*La vertu est louable.*      Virtue is laudable.

## Examples.

*Gli uomini sono mortali.*      Men are mortal.  
*Il ferro è utile.*      Iron is useful.  
*La virtù è lodevole.*      Virtue is laudable.

## ARTICLES.

### SPANISH.

*de un*, of or from *a* or *an*, before a noun, masc.  
*de una* before a noun, fem.

### PORtUGUESE.

*de um* before a noun, masc.  
*de uma* before a noun, fem.

## Agreement with Noun.

} Same.

### Examples.

<i>El hombre</i>	The man.
<i>Las mugeres</i>	The women.

In Spanish, a repetition is only necessary for the purpose of avoiding obscurity.

} Same.

### Examples.

<i>o homem</i>	The man.
<i>as mulheres</i>	The women.

} Same.

## In a General Sense.

} Same.

### Examples.

<i>Los hombres son mortales.</i>	Men are mortal.
<i>El hierro es util.</i>	Iron is useful.
<i>La industria y la diligencia son hijas de la esperanza.</i>	Industry and diligence are the offspring of hope.

} Same.

### Examples.

<i>O homem é mortal.</i>	Man is mortal.
<i>O ferro é util.</i>	Iron is useful.
<i>A caridade bem ordenada começa por nós mesmos.</i>	Charity begins at home.

## ARTICLES.

## In a Particular Sense.

## FRENCH.

3. A Noun denoting some particular object takes the } Same article.

*Example.*

*L'homme qui vient de sortir.*  
The man who has just gone out.

## ITALIAN.

*Ecco la strada.*  
Here is the street.

## In a Partitive Sense.

4. Substantives in a partitive sense, denoted in English by "some" or "any," expressed or understood, are preceded in French by the article with the preposition *de*.

*Examples.*

*Donnez-moi du pain.*  
Give me some bread.  
*A-t-il de la viande ?*  
Has he any meat?

In Italian, when a portion of what is mentioned is meant, the article and preposition are used, but not where no idea of quantity is given (Note a.)

*Examples.*

*Datemi del pane.*  
Give me some bread.  
*Non vogliamo pane.*  
We want no bread.

Note a.—Buommatei writes:—"Noi diciamo *bere vino*, *bere il vino*, e *bere del vino*: e il primo significa non astenersi del vino, il secondo bere tutto il vino di cui si tratta, e il terzo bere qualche quantità di vino," (the first signifies, not abstaining from wine; the second, drinking all the wine of which mention is made; and the third, drinking some quantity of wine).

## ARTICLES.

9

### In a Particular Sense.

SPANISH.

} Same.

*Example.*

Contamos con marchar *la* semana proxima.  
We think of going next week.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Example.*

*O* tribunal *do* thesouro nacional.  
The tribunal of the national treasury.

### In a Partitive Sense.

In Spanish, a noun, in a partitive sense, does not } Same.  
require the article.

*Examples.*

Deme Vmd. carne.  
Give me some meat.  
Quiere Vmd. dinero?  
Do you want any money?

*Examples.*

V. quer presunto?  
Will you have some ham?  
Aqui estão ovos.  
Here are some eggs.

## ARTICLES.

## Before Countries, &amp;c.

## FRENCH.

5. The article is most frequently used before countries, provinces, and kingdoms, but this cannot be laid down as a rule, the exceptions being too numerous. The names of rivers are always preceded by the article, also several islands.

The names of cities and towns do not take the article, except *le Caire* and a few others.

*Examples.*

Les nations de l'Europe.

The nations of Europe.

Les guerres de la Russie.

The wars of Russia.

La carte de Paris.

The map of Paris.

6. When the preposition *in* or *from* precedes the } name of a country, no article is required (Note a.)      } Same.

*Examples.*

Demeurer *en* France.

To live in France.

Il vient *de* France.

He comes from France.

## ITALIAN.

The article is used when the whole of a country, province, &c., is meant; but many islands reject the article.

*Examples.*

*La Russia* è un paese vasto.

Russia is a vast country.

*La Corsica* is said; but Malta, Cipro, and a few others are without the article.

*Examples.*

Ella è in Francia.

She is in France.

Vengo d'Inghilterra.

I come from England.

Note a.—Before the names of the great divisions of the world, the French use the definite article: as,  
Je viens de l'Amérique.                    I come from America.

## Before Countries, &amp;c.

## SPANISH.

Same as French.

*Examples.*

- Los ríos de *la* Russia.  
 The rivers of Russia.  
 Los viajes á *la* China.  
 The voyages to China.  
 Mi viaje á Canton.  
 My voyage to Canton.

Same.

*Examples.*

- Viven *en* Francia.  
 They live in France.  
 Viene *de* Francia.  
 He comes from France.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese, rivers, provinces, and mountains always take the article ; as *o* Ganges, *o* Himalaya, and most islands, as *a* Madeira ; also the names of nearly all empires and kingdoms : as *a* Russia, *a* Italia : but Inglaterra, França, Hespanha, and Portugal may be used both with and without the article. Cities and towns do not take the article, except *o* Cairo, *o* Porto, and a few others.

In Portuguese, the article should be used or not, in accordance with preceding rule.

*Examples.*

- Em* Londres ; *no* Porto.  
 In London ; in Oporto.  
*Vem de* França ; *vem da* Bahia.  
 He comes from France ; he comes from Bahia.

## ARTICLES.

## FRENCH.

7. When the names of countries are employed *adjectively*, the article is not required. } Same.

*Examples.*

- Roi d'Espagne.  
King of Spain.  
Vin de Bordeaux.  
Bordeaux wine.

## ITALIAN.

- Examples.*  
Il re di Spagna.  
The king of Spain.  
Vino di Francia.  
French wine.

## Before Nouns of Weight, &amp;c.

8. The French use the *definite* article before nouns of weight, number, measure, &c., where in English the } Same.  
*indefinite* article can be employed.

*Examples.*

- Un schelling *la* livre.  
A shilling a pound.  
Deux schellings *le* cent.  
Two shillings a hundred.

*Example.*

- Lo zucchero costa sei soldi *la* libbra.  
Sugar costs sixpence a pound.

9. In expressing time, the French use the preposition *par*.

*Example.*

- Tant *par* mois.  
So much a month.

The preposition *a* and the article are used in Italian.

*Example.*

- Una lira *al* giorno.  
A pound a day.

## ARTICLES.

13

### SPANISH.

} Same.

#### *Examples.*

El re de España.  
The king of Spain.  
Vino de Francia.  
French wine.

### PORtUGUESE.

} The article still accords with preceding rule.

#### *Examples.*

O Imperador do Brazil.  
The emperor of Brazil.  
A gazeta de Londres.  
The London journal.

## Before Nouns of Weight, &c.

} Same.

#### *Examples.*

Seis duros *la* libra.  
Six dollars a pound.  
Dos chelines *el* ciento.  
Two shillings a hundred.

} Same.

#### *Example.*

Lenços de cambraia a \$3 *a* duzia.  
Cambric handkerchiefs at three dollars a dozen.

} Same.

#### *Example.*

Seis libras *al* año.  
Six pounds a year.

} *por* in Portuguese.

#### *Example.*

Tanto *por* mes.  
So much a month.

## ARTICLES.

## Before Names of Deities, Titles, &amp;c.

## FRENCH.

10. The article is not required before the names of deities, titles, professions, &c., except in a particular sense (Note a.)

*Examples.*

Dieu est tout puissant.

God is all-powerful.

Le Duc d'Orléans, prince du sang.

The Duke of Orleans, a prince of the blood.

Grammaire Espagnole à l'usage des Français.

A Spanish grammar for the use of the French.

Rue Belgrave, quartier Pimlico.

Belgrave Street, Pimlico.

## ITALIAN.

- Same : the word "house" also dispenses with the article when signifying home or dwelling.

*Examples.*

Manzoni, novellista Italiano.

Manzoni, an Italian novelist.

Dizionario Francese.

A French dictionary.

In teatro, in casa, in piazza (Note b.)

At the theatre, at home, in the square.

Voi siete avvocato. You are a lawyer.

Firenze, bella città. Florence, a fine city.

## Before Names of Celebrities.

11. The French sometimes use the definite article before names of celebrities, such as great poets, but they may also dispense with it, the usage being a mere matter of taste.

*Example.*

*Le Petrarque, L'Arioste.*

Note a.—In all these languages, when the names of deities, &c., denote a particular sense, the article is required : as, *Le Dieu des Chrétiens—The God of the Christians.* Io sono un principe sfortunato—I am an unfortunate prince.

It will be observed in the examples that nouns of title, &c., when no name goes before, take the article.

Note b.—In Italian, the name of any place belonging to the public generally, such as a square, a church, a theatre, does not require the article, unless in a particular sense.

*Example.*

*Il Petrarca, L'Ariosto.*

## Before Names of Deities, Titles, &amp;c.

SPANISH.

Same.  
 } Same.

*Examples.*

Lope de Vega, poeta espagnol.

Lope de Vega, a Spanish poet.

El principe Alberto, consorte de la reina Victoria.

Prince Albert, the consort of Queen Victoria.

Yo soy Ingles.

I am an Englishman.

Está en casa de su padre.

He is in the house of his father.

PORTUGUESE.

Same.  
 } Same.

*Examples.*

Deos, typo da universal perfeição, Supremo Regulador de todas as cousas creadas.

God, the type of universal perfection, the Supreme Regulator of all created things.

Angelo Muniz, presidente do tribunal.

Angelo Muniz, president of the tribunal.

Eu vou para casa.

I am going home.

## Before Names of Celebrities.

Same.  
 } Same.

*Example.*

El Tasso, el Ariosto.

Same.  
 } Same.

*Example.*

o Tasso, o Camões.

## ARTICLES.

## Before Numeral Adjectives.

## FRENCH.

12. No article is used before ordinal numbers when they follow a Substantive ; nor before cardinal numbers used with a noun which does not particularise any object. } Same.

*Examples.*

George premier.  
George the first.  
Livre second.  
Book the second.  
J'ai deux frères.  
I have two brothers.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Pio nono.  
Pius the ninth.  
Libro terzo, verso quinto.  
Book the third, verse the fifth.  
Voglio tre lire.  
I want three pounds.

## Before two or more Adjectives.

13. Two or more adjectives qualifying a substantive expressed, and another understood, require the article } In Italian, this may be made a general rule, but to be repeated before each adjective. } many exceptions are found.

*Example.*

*Le* premier et *le* second étage.  
The first and second floor.

*Example.*

*L'istoria antica e la* moderna.  
Ancient and modern history.

## Before Numeral Adjectives.

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Pio nono.

Pius the ninth.

Capitulo segundo, verso cuarto.

Chapter the second, verse the fourth.

Yo tengo tres caballos.

I have three horses.

*Examples.*

Dom Pedro segundo.

Peter the second.

Livro terceiro, capitulo quarto.

Book the third, chapter the fourth.

Eu tenho tres irmãos.

I have three brothers.

## Before two or more Adjectives.

} The article may or may not be repeated in Spanish, according to taste.

} Same.

*Example.*

*La historia antigua y moderna.*

Ancient and modern history.

*Example.*

*A historia antiga e moderna.*

Ancient and modern history.

## ARTICLES.

## Before Possessive Pronouns.

## FRENCH.

14. Substantives preceded by possessive pronouns do not in French receive the article, thus differing from the Italian rule.

*Examples.*

*Mon frère et ma sœur viendront.*

My brother and sister will come.

*Toute sa vie, à ses yeux, était en avant.*

All his life, in his own sight, was in the future.

## ITALIAN.

The possessive pronoun before a substantive takes the article in Italian, *except* before a noun of kindred or title in the *singular* number, and not preceded by an adjective.

*Examples.*

*Il mio libro ; la mia casa.*

My book ; my house.

*Vostro fratello.*

Your brother.

## With Adverbs of Quantity.

15. No article, but only the preposition *de*, is used with adverbs of quantity, like *much*, *few*, *more*, &c., *except* after *bien* in the sense of *much*.

*Examples.*

*Beaucoup de science.*

Much science.

*Plus de solitude.*

More solitude.

*J'ai bien de l'argent.*

I have much money.

In Italian, neither the article nor the preposition is used, and adverbs of quantity become adjectives.

*Examples.*

*Molto pane ; poca birra.*

Much bread ; little beer.

*Molti amici.*

Many friends.

*Non ho abbastanza tela.*

I have not enough cloth.

## Before Possessive Pronouns.

## SPANISH.

} Same as French.

*Examples.*

- Deme V. *mis* medias.  
Give me my stockings.  
*Su* madre y hermana.  
His mother and sister.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese, a noun preceded by a possessive pronoun may dispense with the article, but frequently takes it for the sake of emphasis or euphony.

*Examples.*

- No estado actual de *seus* conhecimentos, não sabem hoje onde andam *os seus* soldados.  
In the present state of their news they know not to-day where their (own) soldiers go.  
Nascido em *nossos* paços, e sob *o nosso* ceo.  
Born in our courts and under our sky.

## With Adverbs of Quantity.

} Same.

*Examples.*

- Yo tengo *muchos* amigos y *pocos* enemigos.  
I have many friends and few enemies.  
Tiene *demasiado* dinero.  
He has too much money.

} Same.

*Examples.*

- Pouca* chuva e muito vento.  
Little rain and much wind.  
Tem *demasiado* dinheiro.  
He has too much money.  
Tem *bastante* paciencia.  
He has enough patience.

## ARTICLES.

## With an Exclamation.

## FRENCH.

16. No article is required with an exclamation where sometimes *a* or *an* is used in English.

*Example.*

Quel malheur !  
What *a* misfortune !

## ITALIAN.

} Same.

*Example.*

Che casa bella !  
What *a* beautiful house !

## SUBSTANTIVES.

It is needless, if not incorrect, to give the declension of a Substantive; for nouns in the modern Southern languages do not vary, as in Latin, in order to form a particular case; but their meaning is modified by the aid

## FRENCH.

## Formation of the Plural.

## ITALIAN.

17. The plural of French nouns, whether masculine or feminine, is formed by the addition of an *s* to the singular. Such is the general rule.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Homme	a man
Femme	a woman
Mouton	a sheep
Oeuf	an egg
Tête	a head
Loup	a wolf

## PLURAL.

hommes
femmes
moutons
œufs
têtes
loups

17. Italian Substantives all end in vowels, and change for the plural as follows:—

## SINGULAR.

Candela	candle
Padre	father
Mano	hand

## PLURAL.

candeles
padri
mani

*Except* the following, which are irregular:—

Dio	uomo	re	mille
Dei	uomini	re	mila, plural.

## ARTICLES.

21

### With an Exclamation.

SPANISH.  
} Same.

*Example.*  
Que bella muger!  
What a beautiful woman!

PORtUGUESE.  
} Same.

*Example.*  
Que cousa bonita!  
What a pretty thing!

## SUBSTANTIVES.

of the article and preposition, as shown in the table of the Article declined.

SPANISH.

### Formation of the Plural.

PORtUGUESE.

17. Spanish nouns form their plural terminations as follows :—

A noun ending in a vowel (not accented) takes *s* in the plural.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.

Hombre  
Padre  
Cama

man  
father  
bed

PLURAL.

hombres  
padres  
camas

SINGULAR.

Quadro  
Pai  
Cousa

*Examples.*

PLURAL.

quadros  
pais  
cousas

A noun ending in a vowel in the singular adds an *s* to form the plural.

\

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

To the foregoing rule there are certain exceptions, as follows :—

18. Nouns ending in *al* and *ail* change these terminations into *aux*.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Cheval	horse	chevaux
Soupirail	vent-hole	soupiraux

Although some words follow the general rule of adding *s* to the singular, namely :—*Bal, Carnaval, cal, chacal, cérémonial, régâl, sandal, attirail, détail, gouvernail, évantail, sérail, mail, poitrail*, and sometimes, though rarely, *travail*. *Bétail* and *bestiaux* both mean cattle, and are synonymous.

19. Nouns ending in *au* and *eu* add *x* to form the plural.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Château	castle	chateaux
Lieu	place	lieux

Except *bleu*, which adds *s*.

20. Nouns ending in *ou* in the singular form their plural by adding an *s*, according to the general rule, except the words *caillou, chou, genou, hibou, pou*, which take *x* in the plural ; as, *cailloux, &c.*

## ITALIAN.

18. Nouns ending in *co, ca, go, ga*, for the most part take *h* before the final vowel, in order to preserve the hard sound of the consonant.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Antico	ancient	antichi
Barca	boat	barche
Obbligo	obligation	obblighi
Lega	league	leghe

But to this rule there are some exceptions : as,

Amico	friend	amici
Teólogo	theologian	teologi
Greco	Greek	Greci
Porco	hog	porci

19. Some nouns ending in the singular in *io* drop the *o* to form the plural : as, *occhio, eye, occhi, pl.* ; others change *io* into *j* : as, *premio, reward, premj, pl.*

20. The following terminations are invariable :—

à (accented) as *Città, town or towns.*

i as *crisi, crisis, s. or pl.*

ù (accented) as *virtù, virtue or virtues.*

## SPANISH.

18. Nouns ending in consonants (except *z*,) also those terminating in *á* or *í* (accented,) form their plurals by adding *es* to the singular.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Cañon	cannon
Guarnicion	garrison
Superior	superior
Ley	law
Bajá	pasha

## PLURAL.

cañones
guarniciones
superiores
leyes
bajáes

Except a few, such as *crisis*, having the accent on the penult, and which are invariable; also *papá*, *mamá*, *sofá*, which add *s* to form the plural.

19. Substantives terminating in *z* change this letter into *ces* to form the plural.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Luz	light
Actriz	actress

## PLURAL.

luces
actrices

## PORTUGUESE.

18. Nouns ending in *ão* have three different ways of forming the plural, viz. :—

1st, By adding an *s*, according to the above general rule : as,

Irmão (brother)	irmãos, pl.
-----------------	-------------

2d, By changing *ão* into *ões* : as,

Disposição (disposition)	disposições, pl.
--------------------------	------------------

3d, By changing *ão* into *ães* ; as,

Escrivão (scrivener)	escrivães, pl.
----------------------	----------------

*Remark.*—No certain, fixed rule can be established for this termination.

19. Nouns ending in consonants add *es* to the singular, with certain exceptions.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Colher
Voz
Senhor

## PLURAL.

spoon
voz
sir

20. Those terminating in *s* in the singular are invariable in the plural.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

21. Nouns ending in *s*, *x*, *z*, in the singular, remain the same in the plural number.

22. Some words are irregular in the formation of the plural; such are:—

*Ciel*, meaning heaven in general terms, should be, in the plural, *cieux*:

meaning any particular sky, should be *ciels*: as, *Sous un des plus beaux ciels de l'Europe*, Under one of the most beautiful skies of Europe.

*Oeil* has two plurals; namely, *yeux*, when expressing the organ of sight:

*œils* in such compound words as *œil-de-bœuf*, (a kind of window.)

*Aïeul*, meaning grandfather, is written *aïeuls* in the plural; but, when meaning ancestors or grandfathers, it should be *aieux*.

## ITALIAN.

21. There are some nouns ending in *o* which are masculine in the singular number, and by changing the termination into *a* become feminine in the plural.

## Examples.

## SINGULAR.

Un miglio  
Un uovo

a mile  
an egg

PLURAL.  
le miglia  
le uova

22. Also several ending in *o* singular, with two terminations for the plural; namely, *i* masc. and *a* fem.

## Examples.

## SINGULAR.

Braccio  
Dito  
Ginocchio  
Grido  
Labbro  
Membro  
Muro  
Osso  
Riso

arm  
finger  
knee  
cry  
lip  
limb  
wall  
bone  
laugh

Masc.  
bracci  
diti  
ginocchi  
gridi  
labbri  
membri  
muri  
ossi  
risi

Fem.  
braccia  
dita  
ginocchia  
grida  
labbra  
membra  
mura  
ossa  
risa

Remark.—*Legno*, wood, has three terminations in the plural: *legni*, meaning wood in general; *legne* and *legna*, signifying wood for burning.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

25

### SPANISH.

### PORtUGUESE.

21. Nouns ending in *al*, *ol*, *ul*, change the *l* into *es* for the plural.

#### *Examples.*

##### SINGULAR.

Animal

Sol

Paúl

animal

sun

marsh

##### PLURAL.

animaes

soes

paúes

*Except cal, consul, mal, which add es : as, cales, &c.*

22. Nouns ending in *el* change the *l* into *is*.

#### *Example.*

Parcel, a hidden rock

parceis, pl.

23. Nouns ending in *il* change the *l* into *s*.

#### *Example.*

Funil

funnel

funis, pl.

24. Nouns ending in *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, change the *m* into *ns*.

#### *Examples.*

##### SINGULAR.

Homem

Fim

Dom

Atum

man

end

don

tunny

##### PLURAL.

homens

fins

dons

atuns

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## Of the Gender.

## FRENCH.

25. The French language has no neuter gender; therefore, inanimate objects are either masculine or feminine.

*Remark.*—It is perfectly useless to attempt giving any rules by which the gender of French substantives representing inanimate objects can be ascertained. Many grammarians have vainly endeavoured to classify them: but reading and frequent reference to a dictionary are the only feasible methods of acquirement. Some nouns are masculine in one sense and feminine in another. The following are those in most common use:—

26. *Aigle*, eagle, meaning an ensign or armorial bearing, is *feminine*: as, *l'aigle française*. It is masculine in all other senses.

27. *Chose*, thing, is *masculine*, when used with the word *quelque*, except when followed by a verb in the subjunctive mood: as,

Quelque chose de grand.

Something great.

Quelque chose que j'aie faite.

Whatever thing I may have done.

(Here in the feminine, the verb being in the subjunctive.)

## ITALIAN.

} Same.

The gender of Italian nouns is much more easily subjected to general rules than that in the French language. The masculine and feminine are distinguished as follows:—

26. *Masculine* nouns end

in o	except	mano	hand
in me	"	eco	echo
in re	"	arme	arms
		fame	hunger
		speme	hope
		febbre	fever
		madre	mother
		polvere	dust
		scure	axe
		torre	tower
in nte	"	corrente	current
		gente	people
		lente	lentil
		mente	mind
		semente	seed

All which are *feminine*.

## Of the Gender.

## SPANISH.

Same.

Same.

26. Feminine nouns end  
in *a*, except

Guardacosta

custom-house boat

Guardaropa

wardrobe

Tapaboca

slap on the mouth

and, as in Italian, several words adopted from  
the Greek : as,

Poema poem

Clima climate

and names of professions, &c., applying to men.

in *d*, except

Ardid

stratagem

Laud

lute

Sud

south

and a few others.

in *ion*, except

Gorrion

sparrow

Morrion

steel helmet.

## PORTUGUESE.

Same.

Same.

Same.

Same.

26. Feminine nouns end  
in *a*, except

Dia

day

Chá

tea

Planeta

planet

and, as in Italian and Spanish, several  
words adopted from the Greek : as,

Clima

climate

and nouns signifying occupations belonging  
to men : as,

Mariola,

a porter.

in *ade*, except

Alvaiade

ceruse

in *ude*, except

Alaúde

lute

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

*Chose* is also masculine when used with *autre* in an indeterminate sense : as,

*Autre chose de bon est promis.*

Some other good thing is promised.

Note that *de* is employed after *chose* and before the adjective which qualifies it.

In all other senses this noun is feminine.

28. *Couple*, when speaking of two beings united by marriage, friendship, family, &c., is *masculine* : as,

*Un couple charmant.*

A charming couple.

When not referring to persons, it is *feminine* : as,

*Une couple de pigeons.*

A brace of pigeons.

*Une couple d'heures.*

A couple of hours.

29. *Délice* is *masculine* in the singular number, and *feminine* in the plural : as,

*Un vrai délice.*

A true pleasure.

*Mes plus chères délices.*

My dearest pleasures.

## ITALIAN.

27. Feminine nouns end

in *a*, except several words derived from the Greek, and names of professions, &c., applying to men : such as,

Clima	climate	}
Poema	poem	
Problema	problem	
Tema	theme	
Dentista	dentist	

Farmacista chemist

in *u*, except *Ragù*, ragout, and some names of countries ; as *Corfù*, *Perù*, which are *masculine*.

28. Names of fruit-trees ending in *o*, and which are of the *masculine* gender, by changing the termination into *a*, become *feminine*, and then signify the *fruit* ; as,

Mandorlo an almond-tree.

Mandorla almond.

29. To the preceding rule there are some exceptions : the following express both the *tree* and the *fruit*, and are *masculine* :—

Arancio	orange
Dattero	date
Fico	fig
Pomo	apple

## SUBSTANTIVES.

29

### SPANISH.

27. *Masculine* nouns for the most part end in any other letters than *a*, *d*, or *ion*.

### PORTUGUESE.

27. *Masculine* nouns for the most part end in any other letters than *a*, *ade*, *ude*.

28. The following, both in Spanish and Portuguese, are the most common among several exceptions to the preceding rule: custom has assigned to them the *feminine* gender. It is worthy of remark that most of the words are written precisely the same in both languages.

### SPANISH.

Cal	lime	cal
Flor	flower	flôr
Nuez	nut	noz
Cruz	cross	cruz
Corte	court	côrte
Paz	peace	paz
Voz	voice	voz
Luz	light	luz
Ley	law	lei
Fé	faith	fé
Nieve	snow	neve
Muerte	death	morte
Ánade	duck	adem
Base	base	base
Fuente	fountain	fonte
Ave	fowl	ave

### PORTUGUESE.

### SPANISH.

Gente	people	gente
Carne	flesh	carne
Peste	plague	peste
Parte	part	parte
Suerte	fortune	sorte
Col	cabbage	couve
Vez	time	vez
Imagen	image	imagem
Llave	key	chave
Torre	tower	torre
Noche	night	noite
Liebre	hare	lebre
Serpiente	serpent	serpente
Fiebre	fever	febre
Tarde	afternoon	tarde

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## FRENCH.

30. *Gens.* All Adjectives and words relating to this noun are *masculine* when *following* it : as,  
*Ce sont des gens excellents.*  
 They are excellent people.

And *feminine* when they *precede* the word *gens* : as,  
*Les vieilles gens* sont soupçonneux.  
 Old people are suspicious.

When the words *certain*, *tout*, *quel*, *tel*, *immediately* precede *gens*, they are placed in the *feminine*; but, if another word intervene, they must be in the *masculine* : as,

*Certaines gens d'esprit.*  
 Certain people of talent.  
*Tous les jeunes gens* sont imprudents.  
 All young people are imprudent.

31. The following are masculine in the first signification, and feminine in the second :—

	Masc.	Fem.
<i>Livre</i>	book.	pound
<i>Manche</i>	handle	sleeve
<i>Mémoire</i>	memorandum	memory
<i>Mode</i>	system	fashion
<i>Page</i>	a'tendant	page of a book
<i>Poste</i>	place ; position	for letters
<i>Souris</i>	smile	mouse
<i>Tour</i>	turn	tower
<i>Trompette</i>	trumpeter	trumpet
<i>Voile</i>	veil	sail.

## ITALIAN.

30. Some nouns are of both genders : as,

Il, or la fine	the end
Il, or la folgore	the thunderbolt
Il, or la fonte	the fountain

31. There are some few nouns which are masculine in one signification, and feminine in another : as,

Masc.	Fem.
<i>Dramma</i>	a play
<i>Margin</i>	margin
<i>Tema</i>	theme

## SPANISH.

29. In Spanish, there are several nouns ending in *z*, denoting qualities in the abstract; such are generally *feminine*: as,

*Fluidez*  
*Liquidez*

liquidity  
liquidness

## PORTUGUESE.

29. There is no correct rule for distinguishing the gender of nouns ending in *ão*: although the greater part take the *feminine* gender, a very large quantity are of the *masculine*.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## Augmentatives.

## FRENCH.

32. The French language has not the advantage possessed by the others of being able to augment nouns by the addition of certain terminations called *Augmentatives*; but adjectives must be employed to qualify the object.

*Examples.*

Un homme grand	a tall man
Un vilain homme	a disagreeable man.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, the noun may be augmented by changing the last vowel into *one* or *otto*: a *feminine* noun thus changed becomes *masculine*.

*Remark.*—There are also several terminations, such as *accio*, *astro*, *azzo* (*a* in the fem. :) these imply contempt, or convey the idea of some bad quality; their use should be attempted only by those well acquainted with the language.

*Examples.*

Libro, a book	librone, a great book
Una donna, a woman	un bel donnone, a fine woman.

## Diminutives.

33. Almost the same remark may apply here, as in the preceding on Augmentatives; but sometimes a noun may be made a diminutive by the addition of *ette*.

*Examples.*

Un petit homme	a little man
Maison	a house
Maisonnette	a small house.

Italian Diminutives are:—

*ino, ello, etto, masculine*  
*ina, ella, etta, feminine.*

When adding these, the last vowel of the noun is suppressed (Note a.)

*Examples.*

Libro, a book	libretto, a small book
Casa, a house	casetta, a small house

Note a.—Some diminutives are irregular in their formation: as *cane*, a dog; *cagnuolino*, a little dog.

## Augmentatives.

## SPANISH.

In Spanish, the noun is augmented by adding the following terminations to the last consonant.

*on, ote, azo*, for the masculine.

*ona, ota, aza*, for the feminine.

Sometimes a feminine noun becomes masculine when augmented.

*Examples.*

Hombre, a man

*hombron*, a tall man

Muger, a woman

*mugeron*, a masculine woman

Mosca, a fly

*moscon*, a large fly.

## PORTUGUESE.

The terminations in Portuguese (Note a) most commonly used are :—

*rão, zarrão, lhão*, for the masculine.

*ona, ota*, for the feminine.

Vilifying nouns, or those expressing contempt, are of frequent use : they mostly end in *chão, aço, aça*.

The same remark applies to them as that in the Italian column.

*Examples.*

Chapeo, a hat

*chapeirão*, a big hat

Mulher, a woman

*mulherona*, a masculine woman

Sabio, a learned man

*sabichão*, a pedant.

## Diminutives.

Spanish Diminutives are :—

*illo, ito, ico, uelo*, masculine.

*illa, ita, ica, uela*, feminine.

These are added to the last consonant of the noun.

*Examples.*

Juan, John

*Juanito*, little John

Casa, house

*casita*, small house.

Portuguese Diminutives are :—

*ete, ito, ilho, inho, zinho*, masculine.

*ita, ilha, inha, zinha*, feminine.

*Examples.*

Lugar, a village

*lugarete*, or *lugarinho*, a

little village.

Cara, a face

*carinha*, a little face.

Note a.—The manner of adding these terminations is very irregular in Portuguese when the last letter of the noun is a vowel. After a little practice, the ear will be the best guide.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

## Compound Substantives.

## FRENCH.

34. In English, there are several compounds expressed by two nouns; these in French require the preposition *à* between them, and sometimes the article.

## Examples.

Moulin à eau	water-mill
Machine à vapeur	steam machine
Pot au lait	milk-pot.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, a preposition is also required, namely—  
*da* when the idea of *use* is implied;  
*a* when wishing to express “by means of,” or  
“with.”

## Examples.

Una camera <i>da letto</i>	a bed-room
Bastimento <i>a vapore</i>	steam-boat
Casa <i>a tre torri</i>	house with three towers.

## Plural of Compound Substantives.

35. French compounds mostly consist of two words joined together by a hyphen, a preposition sometimes intervening. When the words are two substantives, or a substantive and an adjective, each takes the mark of the plural, *except* when a preposition comes between: in which case the first noun alone is changed to form the plural (Note a.) Verbs, adverbs, and prepositions are invariable.

Italian compounds are not, like the French, joined together by a hyphen. The parts compounded are made to form one word, which is subject to the rules already given on the formation of plurals, or they are used separately with a preposition as in preceding examples, the first noun only taking the mark of the plural.

Note a.—*Tête-à-tête* is an exception: it remains the same in the plural: as, *des tête-à-tête*.

## Compound Substantives.

## SPANISH.

In Spanish, the preposition *de* is employed, except in some instances where *para* (for) is required in order to give the precise meaning (Note a.)

*Examples.*

Cuarto <i>de</i> dormir	a bed-room
Maquina <i>de</i> vapor	steam-machinery
Botella <i>para</i> vino	wine bottle.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Instrumento <i>de</i> vento	a wind instrument
Maquina <i>de</i> vapor	steam machinery
Papel <i>para</i> cartas.	letter paper.

Same.

## Plural of Compound Substantives.

The Portuguese frequently join two words by a hyphen, the last word alone taking the mark of the plural; but it is correct to follow the rule laid down for Italian and Spanish compounds.

Note a.—Botella *de* vino means a bottle of wine.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

	FRENCH.		ITALIAN.
SINGULAR.	Examples.	PLURAL.	Examples.
Un chien-loup	a wolf dog	<i>des chiens-loups</i>	a lieutenant
Un grand-maître	a grand-master	<i>des grands-maîtres</i> (Note a.)	a rainbow
Un arc-en-ciel	a rainbow	<i>des arcs-en-ciel.</i>	tooth-drawer
Un cure-dents	a tooth-pick	<i>des cure-dents</i>	
Un pour-boire	drink-money	<i>des pour-boire.</i>	

Note a.—When *grand* is used with an apostrophe, it is invariable: as, *des grand'mères*.

## SUBSTANTIVES.

37

### SPANISH.

#### Examples.

##### SINGULAR.

Un lugarteniente  
Un sacadinero  
Un sacamuelas

a lieutenant  
a toy  
tooth-drawer

##### PLURAL.

*lugartenientes*  
*sacadineros*  
*sacamuelas.*

##### SINGULAR.

Um lugartenente  
Passa-tempo, or  
Passatempo  
(The latter preferred.)

### PORTEGUESE.

#### Examples.

##### PLURAL.

*lugartenentes*  
*passa-tempos, or*  
*passatempos.*

a lieutenant  
pastime

## ADJECTIVES.

*General Remark.*—No particular explanation of this part of speech is necessary: the nature and office of the Adjective are easily comprehended. In all languages, it agrees in gender and number with the noun it

## Formation of the Feminine.

## FRENCH.

36. The feminine of French Adjectives is formed, as a general rule, by the addition of *e* mute to the masculine singular, some adjectives in *er* and *et* accenting the last *e* of the masculine (Note *a*.)

## Examples.

Masc.		Fem.
Petit	little	<i>petite</i>
Étranger	foreign	<i>étrangère</i>
Secret	secret	<i>secrète</i> .

Note *a*.—There are several French adjectives irregular in the formation of the feminine termination; the principal are:—

Doux, m.	douce, f.	Public, m.	publique, f.	Gros, m.	grosse, f.	Gentil, m.	gentille, f.
Faux, m.	fausse, f.	Sec, m.	sèche, f.	Beau, m.	belle, f.	Long, m.	longue, f.
Vieux, m.	vieille, f.	Bas, m.	basse, f.	Favori, m.	favorite, f.	Mou, m.	molle, f.
Blanc, m.	blanche, f.	Exprès, m.	expresse, f.	Fou, m.	folle, f.	Nouveau, m.	nouvelle, f.
Franc, m.	franche, f.	Gras, m.	grasse, f.	Frais, m.	fraiche, f.	Sot, m.	sotte, f.

Also a large number ending in *eur*, which have four different terminations in the feminine, namely, changing *eur* into *eure*, *euse*, *rice*, *eresse*: as, *antérieur*, m., *antérieure*, f.; *boudeur*, m., *boudeuse*, f., &c. For these, a dictionary is the best reference.

## ITALIAN.

The feminine terminations in this language are not subject to so many variations as in French.

Most adjectives end in *o* and *e*.

Those in *o* masculine change into *a* for the feminine.

## Examples.

Masc.		Fem.
Cattivo	bad	<i>cattiva</i>
Umido	damp	<i>umida</i> .

qualifies, to this effect, varying in termination according to the rules which follow. Its degrees of comparison are afterwards given, and its position in a sentence determined, so far as it is possible to do so by any fixed rules.

### Formation of the Feminine.

#### SPANISH.

Feminine Adjectives are thus formed :—

Those ending in *o* masc. change this letter into *a*.

#### *Example.*

Serio, masc.      serious      *seria*, fem.

All other terminations are common to both genders.

#### *Examples.*

Habil,    masc. and fem.

skilful

Inferior,    "

inferior

Elegante,    "

elegant.

} Same, (Note *a.*)

#### PORTEGUESE.

#### *Example.*

Famoso, masc.      famous      *famosa*, fem.

} Same.

#### *Examples.*

Feliz,    masc. and fem.

Gentil,    "

Breve,    "

happy

genteel

short.

Note *a.*—*Só*, only or alone, when it serves as an adjective, is the only one in *o* which is common to both genders, (except numerals, and some in *ao*;) but it takes *s* for the plural, as : As religiosas estão *sós* com Deos—Nuns are alone with God.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

37. Adjectives ending in *e* mute remain the same in the feminine.

*Examples.*

<i>Un jeune homme</i>	a young man
<i>Une jeune fille</i>	a young girl.

38. Exceptions to the general rule are as follows:—

Adj. in *f* change into *ve*: as,

<i>Actif</i> , masc.	<i>active</i> , fem.
----------------------	----------------------

*x* into *se*: as,

<i>Joyeux</i> , masc.	<i>joyeuse</i> , fem.
-----------------------	-----------------------

in *on*, *en*, *el*, *eil*, *et*, double the final consonant and take *e* mute: as,

<i>Bon</i> , masc.	<i>bonne</i> , fem.
--------------------	---------------------

<i>Actuel</i> , masc.	<i>actuelle</i> , fem.
-----------------------	------------------------

## ITALIAN.

Adjectives ending in *e* masculine remain the same in the feminine.

*Examples.*

Masc.	Fem.
<i>Amabile</i>	<i>amiable</i>
<i>Audace</i>	<i>audacious</i>

*Remark.*—There are some few adjectives in *i* which are also invariable in gender.

## Formation of the Plural.

39. The plural of Adjectives is formed in the same manner as that of Substantives.

} Same.

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<i>Un joli garçon</i>	<i>des jolis garçons</i>
<i>Une jolie fille</i>	<i>des jolies filles.</i>
<i>Une belle femme</i>	<i>des belles femmes</i>
woman	
<i>Un habit noir</i>	<i>des habits noirs.</i>

*Examples.*

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<i>Uomo bello</i>	<i>uomini belli</i>
<i>Donna bella</i>	<i>donne belle</i>
<i>Uomo felice</i>	<i>uomini felici</i>
<i>Donna felice</i>	<i>donne felici.</i>

## ADJECTIVES.

### SPANISH.

With some few exceptions, such as adjectives derived from names of countries, which add *a* to the masculine.

#### *Examples.*

Español, masc.  
Ingles, masc.

*española*, fem.  
*inglesa*, fem.

### PORUGUESE.

Except some adjectives derived from the names of countries, and a few others in *or*, *um*, *u*, which add *a* to the masculine.

#### *Examples.*

Portuguez, masc.  
Cru, masc. (raw)

*portugueza*, fem.  
*crua*, fem.

*Remark.*—A few adjectives in *ao* change this termination into *á* (accented): as,  
*Mao*, masc. (bad)                            *má*, fem.

## Formation of the Plural.

} Same.

#### *Examples.*

} Same.

SINGULAR.  
Hombre bello  
Muger bella  
Muchacho feliz  
Muchacha feliz

a fine man  
a fine woman  
a happy boy  
a happy girl

PLURAL.  
hombres *bellos*  
mujeres *bellas*  
muchachos *felices*  
muchachas *felices*.

SINGULAR.  
Homem feliz  
Toalha fina  
Autoridad central  
Mulher agradavel

#### *Examples.*

happy man  
fine towel  
central authority  
agreeable woman

PLURAL.  
homens *felizes*  
toalhas *finas*  
autoridades *centraes*  
mulheres *agradaveis.*

## ADJECTIVES.

## Degrees of Comparison.

## POSITIVE.

## FRENCH.

40. The *Positive* expresses the quality of an object  
without any comparison. } Same.

*Example.*

Un beau cheval

a fine horse.

## ITALIAN.

*Example.*

Un piccolo bambino

a small child.

## COMPARATIVE.

41. The Comparative is divided into three classes :  
namely, of *Superiority*, *Inferiority*, and *Equality*. } Same.

## Comparative of Superiority.

42. This, in French, is formed by *plus* (more) before  
the adjective, the word *than* being expressed by *que*.

*Examples.*

- Un élément *plus* universel et *plus* simple *que* l'océan.  
An element more universal and simple than the ocean.  
Il avait une sœur *plus* jeune *que* ses frères.  
He had a sister younger than his brothers.

In Italian, place *più* (more) before the adjective, the word *than* being expressed by *di* and by *che*, as follows :—

By *di* before a proper name, a numeral adjective, or a pronoun which is not the subject of a verb following it.

*Examples.*

- Egli è *più* ricco *di* voi e *di* Bernardo.  
He is richer than you and than Bernard.  
*Più di* tre lire.  
More than three pounds.  
Voi siete *più* generoso *del* vostro amico.  
You are more generous than your friend.

## Degrees of Comparison.

## POSITIVE.

## SPANISH.

} Same.

*Example.*

Una muger rica

a rich woman.

} Same.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*

Uma excellente eleição

an excellent choice.

## COMPARATIVE.

} Same.

} Same.

## Comparative of Superiority.

In Spanish, the Comparative of Superiority is formed by placing *mas* (more) before the adjective, the word *que* being translated by *que*. } In Portuguese by *mais* (more) and *que*.

*Examples.*

- Él es *mas* viejo *que* ella.  
He is older than she is.  
Tiene *mas* dinero *que* yo.  
He has more money than I.

*Examples.*

- É *mais* forte *que* seu irmão.  
He is stronger than his brother.  
Elle é *mais* rico *que* ella.  
He is richer than she is.

*Remark.*—The Portuguese frequently place the word *do* before *que*.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

## ITALIAN.

*Than* is rendered by *che* before a pronoun which is the subject of a verb following it, and when the comparison is between two substantives, adjectives, adverbs, or infinitives.

*Examples.*

- Egli è più dotto *che* io non credeva.  
He is more learned than I thought.  
Si vedono più servi *che* padroni.  
More servants than masters are seen.  
Ella è più ricca *che* bella.  
She is richer than she is beautiful.  
È meglio tardi *che* mai.  
It is better late than never.  
È meglio ridere *che* piangere.  
It is better to laugh than to cry.

## Comparative of Inferiority.

43. The Comparative of Inferiority is expressed by }      In Italian, by *meno* (less) and *che*.  
*moins* (less) before the adjective, and *que* after.

*Example.*

Elle est *moins* riche *que* son frère.  
She is less rich than her brother.

*Example.*

Egli è *meno* ricco *che* generoso.  
He is less rich than generous.

**SPANISH.****PORtUGUESE.****Comparative of Inferiority.**

} In Spanish, by *menos* (less) and *que*.

*Example.*

El oro es *menos* útil *que* el hierro.  
Gold is less useful than iron.

} Same.

*Example.*

O ouro é *menos* útil *que* o ferro.  
Gold is less useful than iron.

**ADJECTIVES.****Comparative of Equality.****FRENCH.**

44. This is expressed by the words *aussi* and *que*.

*Example.*

Qui lance l'homme et ses armées *aussi* loin et *aussi* vite  
*que* sa pensée.

Which urges on man and his armies as far and as quick  
as his thought.

**ITALIAN.**

The Italian Comparative of Equality is formed as follows:—

*Examples.*

Egli è tanto dotto quanto il maestro.

Or, così dotto come "

Or, " dotto quanto "

Or, altrettanto dotto che "

He is as learned as the master.

**The Superlative Degree.**

45. The Superlative Degree is both *relative* and *absolute*. It is *relative* when expressing an idea of comparison, and then requires the definite article before the adverbs of comparison, such as *more*, *less*, *better*, &c., except when a possessive pronoun precedes the adverb.

Same; except that the article should not be repeated when the adverb follows the noun.

*Examples.*

Les parfums *les plus* suaves et *les plus* inconnus arri-  
vaient jusqu' aux vaisseaux.

Perfumes the most fragrant and unknown reached the  
vessels.

*Son plus puissant ennemi.*  
His most powerful enemy.

*Examples.*

*Nella più bassa falda.*

On the lowest side.

*L'uomo più dotto.*

The most learned man.

## Comparative of Equality.

## SPANISH.

} In Spanish, by *tan* and *como*.

*Example.*

Juan es *tan* rico, *como* Alberto.  
John is as rich as Albert.

Before another adjective, *cuan* may also be used instead of *como*: as,

Él es *tan* rico *cuan* hermoso.  
He is rich as he is handsome.

## PORTUGUESE.

} In Portuguese by *tão* and *como*.

*Example.*

João é *tão* rico *como* Alberto.  
John is as rich as Albert.

} Same of *quanto*; as,

É *tão* rico *quanto* bello.  
He is rich as he is handsome.

## The Superlative Degree.

} Same as Italian.

} Same.

*Examples.*

*La mas ingrata muger.*  
The most ungrateful woman.  
*Los sucesos mas comunes.*  
The most common incidents.

*Examples.*

*A mais viva alegria do povo.*  
The liveliest joy of the people.  
*Com a confiança mais expressiva.*  
With the most expressive confidence.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

46. The Superlative *Absolute* admits of no comparison, and is expressed by means of adverbs, such as } Same: it may also be expressed by changing the last vowel of the positive into *issimo* (Note a.)  
*very, infinitely, &c.*

*Examples.*

Mon père était *très* riche.

My father was very rich.

Elle est *infiniment* belle.

She is exceedingly beautiful.

Ce que vous dites est *parfaitement* juste.

What you say is perfectly just.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Onesto honest

*Onestissimo* }  
*Molto onesto* } very honest.  
*Assai onesto*

47. The following adjectives, among others, form } In Italian, thus:—  
 their degrees of comparison irregularly:—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
Good <i>bon</i>	Better <i>meilleur</i>	Best <i>le meilleur</i>	Good	<i>buono</i>	<i>migliore</i>
Bad <i>mauvais</i>	Worse <i>pire</i>	Worst <i>le pire</i> .	Bad	<i>cattivo</i>	<i>peggiore</i>
Little <i>petit</i>	Less <i>moindre</i> .	Least <i>le moindre</i> .	Little	<i>piccolo</i>	<i>minore</i>

Note a.—Adjectives ending in *eo, ca, go, ga*, take the letter *h* before *issimo*: as, *largo, larghissimo*: those in *io* drop both the vowels.

# ADJECTIVES.

49

## SPANISH.

In Spanish the Superlative *Absolute* is also expressed by means of adverbs, such as *very*, &c.; or by adding } Same, and by adding *issimo* (Note b.) *isimo* to the last consonant (Note a.)

### *Examples.*

Hermoso	handsome.
<i>Hermosissimo</i>	very handsome.
<i>Muy hermoso</i>	

## PORTUGUESE.

### *Examples.*

Numeroso	numerous.
<i>Numerosissimo</i>	very numerous.
<i>Muito numeroso</i>	

} In Spanish thus :—

	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
Good	bueno	mejor	optimo
Bad	malo	peor	pesimo
Little	pequeño	menor	minimo.

} In Portuguese thus :—

	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
Good	bom	melhor	optimo
Bad	mau	peor	pessimo
Little	pequeno	menor	minimo.

Note a.—*Ble* changes into *bil*; *co* changes into *qu*; *z* changes into *c*—before *isimo*.

Note b.—*Z* changes into *c*; *go* changes into *gu*; *vel* changes into *bil*—before *issimo*.

## ADJECTIVES.

## Numeral Adjectives.

## FRENCH.

48. The Cardinal Numbers remain the same for both genders, except *un*, and a few hereafter noted.

49. The Ordinal Numbers are as other adjectives, adding an *s* in the plural. Ordinals are invariable as regards gender; they all terminate in *e*, with the exception of "premier" and "second," which make "première" and "seconde" for the feminine.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Un, une	1st. Premier, première
2. Deux	2nd. Second, seconde (or deuxième)
3. Trois	3rd. Troisième
4. Quatre	4th. Quatrième
5. Cinq	5th. Cinquième
6. Six	6th. Sixième
7. Sept	7th. Septième
8. Huit	8th. Huitième
9. Neuf	9th. Neuvième
10. Dix	10th. Dixième

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Uno, una	1st. Primo
2. Due	2nd. Secondo
3. Tre	3rd. Terzo
4. Quattro	4th. Quarto
5. Cinque	5th. Quinto
6. Sei	6th. Sesto
7. Sette	7th. Settimo
8. Otto	8th. Ottavo
9. Nove	9th. Nono
10. Dieci	10th. Decimo

## ITALIAN.

The Cardinal Numbers are—like the French—invariable, with the exception of "uno" and its compounds *mille* and *milione* (Note a.)

The Ordinal Numbers are as adjectives, agreeing in gender, &c., with their nouns.

Note a.—When Cardinal Numbers are used as substantives, they are declinable: as, *i quattro*, *i cinqui*, &c., except *tre*, *sei*, and *dieci*, which are invariable: as, *un tre*, *due tre*, &c.

## Numeral Adjectives.

## SPANISH.

In Spanish all Cardinal Numbers except "uno" and the compounds of "ciento" are indeclinable.

} Same.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese all Cardinal Numbers, except *um*, one, *dous*, two, and the compounds of *cento*, a hundred, are indeclinable.

} Same.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Uno
2. Dos
3. Tres
4. Cuatro
5. Cinco
6. Seis
7. Siete
8. Ocho
9. Nueve
10. Diez

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 1st. Primero
- 2nd. Segundo
- 3rd. Tercero
- 4th. Cuarto
- 5th. Quinto
- 6th. Sexto
- 7th. Séptimo
- 8th. Octavo
- 9th. Noveno, or nono
- 10th. Décimo, or deceno

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Um, m., uma, fem.
2. Dois or dous, m., duas, fem.
3. Tres
4. Quatro
5. Cinco
6. Seis
7. Sete, or sette
8. Oito, or outo
9. Nove
10. Dez

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 1st. Primeiro, m. a. fem.
- 2nd. Segundo
- 3d. Terceiro
- 4th. Quarto
- 5th. Quinto
- 6th. Sexto
- 7th. Setimo, or septimo
- 8th. Oitavo
- 9th. Nono
- 10th. Decimo

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

11. Onze  
 12. Douze  
 13. Treize  
 14. Quatorze  
 15. Quinze  
 16. Seize  
 17. Dix-sept  
 18. Dix-huit  
 19. Dix-neuf  
 20. Vingt  
 21. Vingt et un  
 22. Vingt-deux  
 23. Vingt-trois  
 24. Vingt-quatre

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 11th. Onzième  
 12th. Douzième  
 13th. Treizième  
 14th. Quatorzième  
 15th. Quinzième  
 16th. Seizième  
 17th. Dix-septième  
 18th. Dix-huitième  
 19th. Dix-neuvième  
 20th. Vingtième  
 21st. Vingt et unième  
 22nd. Vingt-deuxième  
 23rd. Vingt-troisième  
 24th. Vingt-quatrième

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

11. Undici  
 12. Dodici  
 13. Tredici  
 14. Quattordici  
 15. Quindici  
 16. Sedici  
 17. Diciassette  
 18. Diciotto  
 19. Diciannove  
 20. Venti  
 21. Ventuno, or Vent'- uno  
 22. Ventidue  
 23. Ventitre  
 24. Ventiquattro

## ITALIAN.

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 11th. Undecimo, undicesimo, decimo primo  
 12th. Duodecimo, dodicesimo, decimo secondo  
 13th. Decimo terzo, tredicesimo  
 14th. Decimo quarto, quattordicesimo  
 15th. Decimo quinto, quindicesimo  
 16th. Decimo sesto, sedicesimo  
 17th. Decimo settimo, diciassettesimo  
 18th. Decimo attavo, diciottesimo  
 19th. Decimo nono, diciannovesimo  
 20th. Ventesimo, vigesimo  
 21st. Ventesimo primo, vigesimo primo  
 22nd. Ventesimo secondo, or vigesimo secondo  
 23rd. Ventesimo terzo, or vigesimo terzo  
 24th. Ventesimo quarto, or vigesimo quarto

# ADJECTIVES.

53

**CARDINAL NUMBERS.**

11. Once
12. Doce
13. Trece
14. Catorce
15. Quince
16. Diez y seis
17. Diez y siete
18. Diez y ocho
19. Diez y nueve
20. Veinte
21. Veinte y uno
22. Veinte y dos
23. Veinte y tres
24. Veinte y cuatro

**SPANISH.**

**ORDINAL NUMBERS.**

- 11th. Undecimo, or Onceno
- 12th. Duodécimo, or doceno
- 13th. Décimo tercio, or treceno
- 14th. Décimo cuarto, or catorceno
- 15th. Décimo quinto, or quinceno
- 16th. Décimo sexto
- 17th. Décimo séptimo
- 18th. Décimo octavo
- 19th. Décimo nono
- 20th. Vigésimo
- 21st. Vigésimo primo
- 22nd. Vigésimo segundo
- 23rd. Vigésimo tercio
- 24th. Vigésimo cuarto

**PORtUGUESE.**

**ORDINAL NUMBERS.**

- 11th. Undecimo, or decimo-primeiro
- 12th. Duodecimo, or decimo-segundo
- 13th. Decimo-terceiro
- 14th. Decimo-quarto
- 15th. Decimo-quinto
- 16th. Decimo-sexto
- 17th. Decimo-septimo
- 18th. Decimo-oitavo
- 19th. Decimo-nono
- 20th. Vigesimo, or vintesimo
- 21st. " primeiro
- 22nd. " segundo
- 23rd. " terceiro
- 24th. " quarto

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

25. Vingt-cinq  
 26. Vingt-six  
 27. Vingt-sept  
 28. Vingt-huit  
 29. Vingt-neuf  
 30. Trente  
 40. Quarante  
 50. Cinquante  
 60. Soixante  
 70. Soixante et dix  
 80. Quatre-vingts  
 90. Quatre-vingt-dix  
 100. Cent

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 25th. Vingt-cinquième  
 26th. Vingt-sixième  
 27th. Vingt-septième  
 28th. Vingt-huitième  
 29th. Vingt-neuvième  
 30th. Trentième  
 40th. Quarantième  
 50th. Cinquantième  
 60th. Soixantième  
 70th. Soixante et dixième  
 80th. Quatre-vingtième  
 90th. Quatre-vingt-dixième  
 100th. Centième

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

25. Venticinque  
 26. Ventisei  
 27. Ventisette  
 28. Ventotto, or Vent'-otto  
 29. Ventinove  
 30. Trenta  
 40. Quaranta  
 50. Cinquanta  
 60. Sessanta  
 70. Settanta  
 80. Ottanta  
 90. Novanta  
 100. Cento

## ITALIAN.

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 25th. Ventesimo quinto, or vigesimo quinto  
 26th. Ventesimo sesto, or vigesimo sesto  
 27th. Ventesimo settimo, or vigesimo settimo  
 28th. Ventesimo ottavo, or vigesimo ottavo  
 29th. Ventesimo nono, or vigesimo nono  
 30th. Trentesimo, or trigesimo  
 40th. Quarantesimo, or quadragesimo  
 50th. Cinquantesimo, or quinquagesimo  
 60th. Sessantesimo, or sessagesimo  
 70th. Settantesimo, or settuagesimo  
 80th. Ottantesimo, or ottuagesimo  
 90th. Novantesimo, or nonagesimo  
 100th. Centesimo

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.	CARDINAL NUMBERS.	ORDINAL NUMBERS.
25. Veinte y cinco	25th. Vigésimo quinto	25. Vinte e cinco	25th. Vigesimo quinto
26. Veinte y seis	26th. Vigésimo sexto	26. Vinte e seis	26th. „ sexto
27. Veinte y siete	27th. Vigésimo séptimo	27. Vinte e sete	27th. „ septimo
28. Veinte y ocho	28th. Vigésimo octavo	28. Vinte e oito	28th. „ oitavo
29. Veinte y nueve	29th. Vigésimo nono	29. Vinte e nove	29th. „ nono
30. Treinta	30th. Trigésimo	30. Trinta	30th. Trigesimo
40. Cuarenta	40th. Cuadragésimo	40. Quarenta	40th. Quadragesimo
50. Cincuenta	50th. Quincuagésimo	50. Cincoenta	50th. Quinquagesimo
60. Sesenta	60th. Sexagésimo	60. Sessenta	60th. Sexagesimo
70. Setenta	70th. Septuagésimo	70. Setenta	70th. Septuagesimo
80. Ochenta	80th. Octagésimo	80. Oitenta	80th. Octagesimo
90. Noventa	90th. Nonagésimo	90. Noventa	90th. Nonagesimo
100. Ciento	100th. Centésimo	100. Cem, or centa	100th. Centesimo

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

101. Cent un  
102. Cent deux  
200. Deux cents

1,000. Mille  
10,000. Dix mille  
1,000,000. Million

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

101st. Cent-unième  
102nd. Cent-deuxième  
200th. Deux centième

1,000th. Millième  
10,000th. Dix millième  
1,000,000th. Millionième

## ITALIAN.

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

101st. Centesimo primo  
102nd. Centesimo secondo  
200th. Docentesimo

1,000th. Millesimo  
10,000th. Decimo millesimo  
1,000,000th.

50. The following are correctly speaking substantives, but, expressing the idea of number, may be classed among numeral adjectives. They are divided into three kinds :

## 1st, Collective, as—

Une douzaine	a dozen.
Une vingtaine	a score.
Un million	a million.

## 2nd, Distributive, as—

La moitié	the half.
Le quart	the quarter.

## 3rd, Proportional, as—

Le double	the double.
Le triple	the triple.
Le centuple	a hundredfold.

Same.

## 1st, As—

Una dozzina	a dozen.
Una ventina	a score.
Un milione	a million.

## 2nd, As—

La metà	the half.
Il quarto	the quarter.

## 3rd, As—

Il doppio	the double.
Il triplo	the triple.
Il céntuplo	a hundredfold.

# ADJECTIVES.

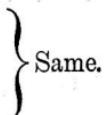
57

## SPANISH.

### CARDINAL NUMBERS.

- 101. Ciento y uno
- 102. Ciento y dos
- 200. Dos cientos

- 1,000. Mil
- 10,000. Diez mil
- 1,000,000. Millon

 Same.

### 1st, As—

- |              |            |
|--------------|------------|
| Una docena   | a dozen.   |
| Una veintena | a score.   |
| Un millon    | a million. |

### 2nd, As—

- |           |              |
|-----------|--------------|
| La mitad  | the half.    |
| El cuarto | the quarter. |

### 3rd, As—

- |             |                |
|-------------|----------------|
| El doble    | the double.    |
| El triple   | the triple.    |
| El centuplo | a hundredfold. |

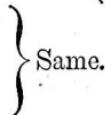
Note a.—A million of reis is expressed by the word *conto*.

### ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 101st. Centésimo primo
- 102nd. Centésimo segundo
- 200th. Docentésimo

- 1,000th. Milésimo
- 10,000th. Decimo milésimo

- 1,000,000. Milhão,  
(Note a.)

 Same.

### 1st, As—

- |             |            |
|-------------|------------|
| Uma duzia   | a dozen.   |
| Uma vintena | a score.   |
| Um milhão   | a million. |

### 2nd, As—

- |          |              |
|----------|--------------|
| A metade | the half.    |
| O quarto | the quarter. |

### 3rd, As,

- |            |              |
|------------|--------------|
| O duplo    | the double.  |
| O triplo   | the triple.  |
| O centuplo | hundredfold. |

## PORTEGUESE.

### ORDINAL NUMBERS.

- 101st. Centesimo primeiro
- 102nd. " segundo
- 200th. Ducentesimo

- 1,000th. Millesimo
- 10,000th. Decimo millesimo

## FRENCH.

51. "Vingt" and "cent" take an *s* in the plural, } except when followed by another number.      ITALIAN.  
 "Venti" and "cento" are invariable in Italian.

*Examples.*

Quatre-vingts personnes	eighty persons.
Deux cents chevaux	two hundred horses.
Quatre-vingt-dix personnes	ninety persons.
Deux cent vingt chevaux	two hundred and twenty horses.

52. "Mille," a thousand, never changes in the plural (Note a.)      "Mille," a thousand, changes into "mila" for the plural.

*Examples.*

Deux mille, trois mille, &c.	two, three, thousand, &c.	Due mila, tre mila	two, three, thousand.
------------------------------	---------------------------	--------------------	-----------------------

53. "Million," a million, forms its plural according to } the general rule of substantives.      Same.

## Days of the Month.

54. The French use the Cardinal Numbers in mentioning all the days of the month except the first.      Same.

*Examples.*

Le premier Janvier	the first of January.
Le deux Mars	the second of March.

And it will be observed that the word "de," of, is omitted.

Note a.—In mentioning the Christian era, *mille* is contracted and written *mil*: as *mil huit cent trois*—one thousand eight hundred and three.

*Examples.*

Il primo di Gennaio	the first of January.
Li due di Marzo	the second of March.
But it will be seen that the word "di," of, is not omitted, as in French.	

## ADJECTIVES.

59

### SPANISH.

The compound of "ciento" agrees in gender with its substantive in the same manner as any other adjective.

} Same of "cento."

#### Examples.

Dos cientos hombres	two hundred men.
Tres cientes mujeres	three hundred women.

### PORTUGUESE.

#### Examples.

Duzentos homens	two hundred men.
Quatro centas meninas	four hundred little girls.

"Mil," a thousand, is invariable, as in French.

#### Examples.

Dos mil, tres mil	two, three thousand.
-------------------	----------------------

"Mil," a thousand, is invariable, as in French and Spanish.

#### Examples.

Dois mil, tres mil	two, three thousand.
--------------------	----------------------

} Same.

} Same.

## Days of the Month.

} Same.

} Same.

#### Examples.

El primero de Enero	the first of January.
Dos de Marzo	the second of March.
The word "de," of, being used as in Italian—not omitted, as in French.	} Same.

#### Examples.

O primeiro de Maio	the first of May.
Tres de Agosto	the third of August.

## ADJECTIVES.

## "All" with Numeral.

## FRENCH.

55. "All," before a number, is rendered in French by "tous" with the definite Article.

## Examples.

<i>Tous les quatre</i>	all four.
<i>Tous les six</i>	all six.
<i>Tous les huit</i>	all eight.

## ITALIAN.

"All," in Italian, takes the conjunction *e* (and), except before a vowel.

## Examples.

<i>Tutti e quattro.</i>	all four.
<i>Tutti e sei</i>	all six.
<i>Tutti otto</i>	all eight.

## The Hour, &amp;c.

56. To denote the hour, the word "heure" is used for o'clock.

## Examples.

<i>À une heure</i>	at one o'clock.
<i>À six heures</i>	at six o'clock.

In denoting the hour, the preposition *a* is combined with the article, and the word "*ora*" (hour) is understood.

## Examples.

<i>All' una della mattina</i>	at one o'clock in the morning.
<i>Alle quattro della sera</i>	at four o'clock in the afternoon.

57. "Ago" is rendered in French by "il y a."

## Examples.

<i>Il y a une semaine</i>	a week ago.
<i>Il y a cinq ans</i>	five years ago.

"Ago" is rendered by *fa* (makes), *è*, or *sono*.

## Examples.

<i>Una settimana fa</i>	a week ago.
<i>Cinque anni sono.</i>	five years ago.

58. "This day month" is expressed by "dès aujourd'hui un mois."

"This day month" is rendered by "da oggi a un mese."

## "All" with Numeral.

## SPANISH.

"All," in Spanish, before a number, is used with or } Same.  
without the article, as in English.

*Examples.*

<i>Todos</i> cuatro, or <i>todos los</i> cuatro	all four.
<i>Todos</i> seis, or <i>todos los</i> seis	all six.
<i>Todos</i> ocho, or <i>todos los</i> ocho	all eight.

## PORTUGUESE.

<i>Todos</i> quatro, or <i>todos os</i> quatro	all four.
<i>Todos</i> seis, or <i>todos os</i> seis	all six.
<i>Todos</i> oito, or <i>todos os</i> oito	all eight.

## The Hour, &amp;c.

In Spanish, the proposition *de* is used, but not joined to the article.

*Examples.*

A la una	one o'clock.
A los dos de la tarde	two o'clock in the evening.

"Ago" is rendered by "ha" (has) or "hace" (makes).

*Examples.*

Cuanto ha?	how long ago?
Hace una semana	a week ago.
Hace algun tiempo	some time ago.

"This day month" is rendered by "desde hoy en un mes."

In denoting the hour, the Portuguese combine the preposition *a* with the article, as in Italian; but the word *hora* (hour) is generally expressed.

*Examples.*

As nove horas e meia do dia.
At half-past nine o'clock in the day.

"Ago" is rendered by *ha* (has), or *faz* (makes).

*Examples.*

<i>Ha</i> muito tempo	long ago.
<i>Faz</i> hoje tres annos	this day three years ago.

"This day month" is rendered by—*De hoje a um mez*, or *d'aqui a um mez*.

**ADJECTIVES.****Of Age.****FRENCH.**

59. In expressing "age," the verb "to have" is used } instead of "to be": as,

*J'avais sept ans*

I was seven years old.

**ITALIAN.**

*Io aveva sett' anni*

I was seven years old.

**Once, Twice, &c.**

60. "Once," "twice," &c. have no equivalent words in French, and are rendered by "one time," "two times," &c.: as,

Une fois

once.

Deux fois

twice.

Trois fois

thrice.

Una volta

due volte

tre volte.

61. In writing "twenty-one," "thirty-one," &c., up to "sixty-one," the French may either use the hyphen (-) or the conjunction *and*, but not with twenty-two, &c.

*Examples.*

*Vingt-un*, or *vingt et un*; *trente-un*, or *trente et un*, &c.

"Uno" or "una" annexed to a number requires the following substantive to be in the singular; but if the definite article or the substantive should precede the number, then the noun is used in the plural.

*Examples.*

*Ventuna libbra*. twenty-one pounds (weight).  
*Le ventuna libbre*, or *libbre ventuna*.

## Of Age.

## SPANISH.

} Same : as,

Yo tenia siete años

I was seven years old.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same : as,

Tenho seis annos

I am six years old.

## Once, Twice, &amp;c.

} Same.

Una vez

dos veces

tres veces.

} Same : as,

Uma vez

duas vezes

tres vezes.

"Uno" drops the *o* when immediately before a noun  
masc.

"Um," "uma," one, is frequently written with an *h*,  
as hum, huma; but this letter is generally suppressed  
by modern writers.

*Example.*

*Un caballo* es bastante      one horse is enough.

"Ciento" drops the *to* before a noun of either gender,  
as *cien hombres*, *cien mugeres*.

The same may be said of "primero" and "tercero,"  
in regard to the letter *o*.

*Cem*, a hundred, is used before a noun, as *cem livros*,  
a hundred books; *cento* with other numerals.

## Concord of the Adjective with the Noun.

## FRENCH.

62. The adjective must agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it relates, by changing its termination in accordance with the rules already given.

*Examples.*

<i>Le bon frère</i>	the good brother.
<i>La bonne mère</i>	the good mother.
<i>Beaux jardins</i>	fine gardens.
<i>Belles maisons</i>	fine houses.

## ITALIAN.

<i>Il buon padre</i>	the good father.
<i>La buona madre</i>	the good mother.
<i>Dei bei giardini</i>	fine gardens.
<i>Delle belle donne</i>	beautiful ladies.

63. Adjectives used adverbially are invariable—that is, they remain always in the masculine singular.

*Example.*

<i>Ces dames parlent bas.</i>
Those ladies speak low.

*Example.*

<i>Queste signore parlano basso.</i>
These ladies speak low.

64. An adjective qualifying two or more substantives *singular* of the same gender must be put in the *plural*, agreeing in gender.

*Example.*

<i>La rose et la violette sont belles.</i>
The rose and the violet are beautiful.

*Example.*

<i>La madre e la figlia sono generose.</i>
The mother and daughter are generous.

## Concord of the Adjective with the Noun.

## SPANISH.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Un hombre <i>rico</i>	a rich man.
Una muger <i>rica</i>	a rich woman.
Hombres <i>ricos</i>	rich men.
Mugeres <i>ricas</i>	rich women.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Um homem <i>rico</i>	a rich man.
Uma mulher <i>rica</i>	a rich woman.
Homens <i>ricos</i>	rich men.
Mulheres <i>ricas</i>	rich women.

} Same.

*Example.*

Etas señoras hablan *alto*.  
These ladies speak loud.

} Same.

*Example.*

Estas senhoras falam *baixo*.  
These ladies speak low.

In Spanish, if the adjective is placed BEFORE the nouns, it is used in the singular; if AFTER, in the plural.

} Same as French.

*Examples.*

El merecido premio y elogio.
The merited reward and praise.
El premio y elogio <i>merecidos</i> .
The reward and praise merited.

*Example.*

Sem caução ou fiança *idoneas* de valor.  
Without caution or security of fit value.

**ADJECTIVES.****FRENCH.**

65. If the substantives are of different genders the }  
adjective must be in the masculine plural (Note a.)      } Same.

*Example.*

Le lis et la rose sont *beaux*.  
The lily and the rose are beautiful.

**ITALIAN.***Example.*

La sorella ed il fratello erano *contenti*.  
The sister and brother were pleased.

**Place of Adjectives.**

Adjectives, in French, generally follow the noun ; those, however, of only one syllable are most frequently placed first, such as "bon," "grand," &c. ; also numeral adjectives, and some which, as explained in Note b, would convey a different meaning were they placed after the noun. Moreover, the position often depends upon the emphasis required to be expressed ; therefore no absolute rules can be laid down. Those adjectives which **ALWAYS** follow the noun are here noted, viz.—

Italian adjectives may generally be placed either before or after their substantives ; but there are some which *always follow*, being subject to the same rules as in the French language.

**Note a.—General.**—When the adjective *precedes* two or more nouns, it is usual in French to repeat it before each substantive with which it is made to agree in gender and number : as, Un bon père et une bonne mère. In the other languages, the adjective is not always repeated ; but it is better to do so most frequently for the purpose of avoiding obscurity.

**Note b.—**In French and in the other languages, there are several adjectives which convey a different meaning according to their position before or after the substantive : as, Un *brave* homme—an *honest* man. Un homme *brave*—a *brave* man. A list, if attempted, would be very incomplete : the student will learn the right position as he advances in the language.

## SPANISH.

The adjective must be in the masc. gender and plural number if it follow the nouns ; but if it precede it } Same.  
may agree with the first noun.

*Examples.*

- Su padre y madre *generosos*.  
His generous father and mother.  
Su *generosa* madre y padre.  
His generous mother and father.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

- Seu pai e mai *generosos*.  
His generous father and mother.  
Sua *generosa* mai e pai.  
His generous mother and father.

## Place of Adjectives.

Adjectives in Spanish *generally* follow their nouns ; those which *always* come after agree with the same rules given for the French and Italian language.

Adjectives such as "many," "few," &c. are placed before their nouns.

With the exception of some adjectives which *always* precede the noun, as in the other languages, the position in Portuguese depends upon no fixed rule. The adjective perhaps most frequently *follows* the noun ; but *euphony* is generally the best guide : as

- Um servo publico de publicos deveres.  
A public servant of public duties.

## ADJECTIVES.

## FRENCH.

66. 1st, Those expressing names of nations (Note a.)

*Example.*

La révolution française      the French revolution.

67. 2nd, Those denoting colour.

*Examples.*

Des gants noirs	black gloves.
Des rubans verts	green ribbons.

68. 3rd, Those formed from the past participle :

*Example.*

Un homme fatigué      a man fatigued.

69. 4th, Those expressing some natural or physical quality, as "heat," "cold," &c. Also adjectives of form.

*Examples.*

Un climat chaud	a hot climate.
Une chambre carrée	a square room.

## ITALIAN.

Adjectives which come *after* the noun :  
1st, Same.

*Example.*

La rivoluzione italiana      the Italian revolution.

- 2nd, Same:

*Examples.*

Scarpe verdi	green shoes.
Inchiostro rosso	red ink.

- 3rd, Same.

*Example.*

Un uomo istruito      a well-informed man.

- 4th, Same.

*Examples.*

Tempo umido	damp weather.
Una camera lunga	a long room.

Note a.—In all these languages, when an adjective denotes nationality, it does not require (as in English) a capital letter; but when expressing the nation itself, the capital letter must always be used.

## SPANISH.

Adjectives which come *after* the noun.

1st, Same.

*Example.*

*El governo inglés*      the English government.

2nd, Same.

*Examples.*

<i>Una casaca negra</i>	a black coat.
<i>Terciopelo azul</i>	blue velvet.

3rd, Same.

*Example.*

*Un hombre instruido*      a well-informed man.

4th, Same.

*Examples.*

<i>Tiempo húmedo</i>	damp weather.
<i>Una mesa cuadrada</i>	a square table.

## PORTUGUESE.

Adjectives which come *after* the noun.

1st, Same.

*Example.*

*As forças francesas*      the French forces.

2nd, Same.

*Examples.*

<i>Marroquim verde</i>	green morocco.
<i>Em caracteres encarnados</i>	in red letters.

3rd, Same.

*Example.*

*Um homem estimado*      an esteemed man.

4th, Same.

*Examples.*

<i>Tempo húmido</i>	damp weather.
<i>Em forma pyramidal</i>	in the form of a pyramid.

## ADJECTIVES.

## Adjectives of Dimension.

## FRENCH.

70. These are expressed in French as follows :

Un mur haut de six pieds.

A wall six feet high.

Une chambre longue de trente pieds ;

or, Une chambre de trente pieds de long, or, de  
longueur.

A room thirty feet long.

## ITALIAN.

- The Italians express dimension as follows :

Un muro lungo venti piedi (without the preposition.)

A wall twenty feet long.

or, Una camera di venti piedi di lunghezza.

A room twenty feet long.

71. The French use the verb "to have" when expressing dimension, not the verb "to be," as in English.

} Same.

*Example.*

Ce mur *a* six pieds de haut.

This wall is six feet high.

*Example.*

Questo muro *ha* venti piedi di altezza.

This wall is twenty feet high.

## Adjectives of Dimension.

## SPANISH.

The Spaniards express dimension as follows :  
 Un muro de veinte pies de largo (or, *de largura*.)  
 A wall twenty feet long.  
 Tres varas de ancho (or, *de anchura*.)  
 Three yards wide.

} Same.

*Example.*

La mesa *tiene* dos pies de altura.  
 The table is two feet high.

## PORTUGUESE.

The Portuguese express dimension as follows :  
 Un muro de seis pés *de alto* (or, *de altura*.)  
 A wall six feet high.  
 Tres pés *de largo* (or, *de largura*.)  
 Three feet broad.

} Same.

*Example.*

A mesa *tem* tres pés de altura.  
 The table is three feet high.

## PRONOUNS.

*General Remark.*—Pronouns are classed under five different denominations, namely:—*Personal, Possessive, Demonstrative, Relative, and Indefinite.* A separate classification is unnecessary for *Interrogative* pronouns, as they are only a peculiar form of the *Relative*. In the following table the ablative case is not added, the pronoun

## Table of Personal Pronouns.

## FIRST PERSON.

## FRENCH.

## Singular.

Nom. I	Je, moi.
Gen. of me	de moi.
Dat. to me	à moi, me.
Acc. me	me.

## Plural.

N. We	Nous.
G. of us	de nous.
D. to us	à nous, nous.
Acc. us	nous.

## ITALIAN.

Io.
di me.
a me, mi.
me, mi.

Noi.
di noi.
a noi, ci.
noi, ci.

## SECOND PERSON.

## Singular.

N. Thou	Tu, toi.
G. of thee	de toi.
D. to thee	à toi, te.
Acc. thee	te

Tu.
di te.
a te, ti.
te ; ti.

being the same as in the genitive, and the preposition which accompanies it varying according to the meaning expressed.

**Table of Personal Pronouns.****FIRST PERSON.****SPANISH.**

Yo.  
de mi.  
á mi, me.  
me, á mi.

Masc.  
Nosotros  
de nosotros  
á nosotros nos, m. and f.  
á nosotros nos, m. and f.

Fem.  
nosotras.  
de nosotras.  
á nosotras.  
á nosotras.

**PORtUGUESE.**  
Eu.  
de mim.  
a mim ; mè.  
me ; a mim.

Nós.  
de nós.  
a nós ; nos.  
a nós ; nos.

**SECOND PERSON.**

Tu.  
de ti.  
á ti ; te.  
te ; á ti.

Tu.  
de ti.  
a ti ; te.  
a ti ; te.

## PRONOUNS.

SECOND PERSON—*continued.*

## FRENCH.

## Plural.

N.	You	Vous.
G.	of you	de vous.
D.	to you	à vous, vous.
Acc.	you	vous.

## ITALIAN.

Voi.
di voi.
a voi, vi.
voi, vi.

## THIRD PERSON.

## Singular Masc.

N.	He	Il, lui.
G.	of him	de lui.
D.	to him	à lui, lui.
Acc.	him	le.

Egli, ei, e'.
di lui.
a lui, gli.
lui, lo, or il.

## Plural Masc.

N.	They	Ils, eux.
G.	of them	d'eux.
D.	to them	leur, à eux.
Acc.	them	les.

Eglino.
di loro.
a loro.
loro, gli, li.

## Singular Fem.

N.	She	Elle.
G.	of her	d'elle.
D.	to her	lui, à elle.
Acc.	her	la.

Ella.
di lei.
a lei, le.
lei, la.

# PRONOUNS.

75

## SECOND PERSON—*continued.*

### SPANISH.

Masc.

Vosotros

de vosotros

á vosotros os, m. and f.

á vosotros os, m. and f.

Fem.

vosotras.

de vosotras.

á vosotras.

### PORtUGUESE.

Vós.

de vós.

a vós ; vos.

a vós ; vos.

## THIRD PERSON.

Él.

de él.

á él, le.

le, á él.

Elle.

delle.

a elle ; lhe.

a elle ; o.

Ellos.

de ellos.

á ellos, les.

los, á ellos.

Elles.

delles.

a elles ; lhes.

a elles ; os.

Ella.

de ella.

á ella, le.

la, á ella.

Ella.

della.

a ella ; lhe.

a ella ; a.

**PRONOUNS.****THIRD PERSON—*continued.*****FRENCH.**

Plural Fem.

N.	They	Elles.
G.	of them	d'elles.
D.	to them	leur, à elles.
Acc.	them	les.

**ITALIAN.**

Elleno.
di loro.
a loro.
loro, le.

*With or without a preposition.*

Myself	moi-même.
Thyself	toi-même.
Himself	lui-même.
Herself	elle-même.
One's self	soi-même.
Ourselves	nous-mêmes.
Yourselves	vous-mêmes.
Themselves	{ soi-mêmes. { eux-mêmes (m.) { elles-mêmes (f.)

*Nominative, or used  
without a Preposition.*

io stesso
tu stesso
egli stesso
ella stessa
se stesso

*Accusative, and when  
with a Preposition.*

me stesso.
te stesso.
se stesso.
se stessa.
noi stessi.

noi stessi
voi stessi.

voi stessi
se stessi.

Se is used in the third person before a verb, as  
 Il se flatte      he flatters himself.

Si in Italian, as  
 Si loda      he praises himself.

## PRONOUNS.

77

### THIRD PERSON—*continued.*

#### SPANISH.

Ellas.  
de ellas.  
á ellas, les.  
las, á ellas (Note a).

Nominative, or used  
*without* a Preposition.

yo mismo  
tu mismo  
él mismo  
ella misma  
si mismo.

nosotros mismos (m.)  
nosotras mismas (f.)  
vosotros mismos (m.)  
vosotras mismas (f.)

ellos mismos (m.)  
ellas mismas (f.)

Accusative, and when  
*with* a Preposition.

mi mismo.  
ti mismo.  
si mismo.  
si misma.

Same.

Nominative, or used  
*without* a Preposition.

eu mesmo  
tu mesmo  
elle mesmo  
ella mesma  
si mesmo.

nós mesmos (m.)  
nós mesmas (f.)  
vós mesmos (m.)  
vós mesmas (f.)

Same.

elles mesmos (m.)  
ellas mesmas (f.)

#### PORtUGUESE.

Ellas.  
dellas.  
a ellas ; lhes.  
a ellas ; as.

Accusative, and used when  
*with* a Preposition.

mim mesmo.  
ti mesmo.  
si mesmo.  
si mesma.

nós mesmos (m.)  
nós mesmas (f.)  
vós mesmos (m.)  
vós mesmas (f.)

Se in Spanish, as

Se aplaude      he praises himself.

Note a.—The Spanish language has also a *neuter* pronoun, *lo* or *ello*, used in the singular number only.

Se in Portuguese, as

Elle se ama      he loves himself.

## PRONOUNS.

## Personal Pronouns.

## Nominative Case.

## FRENCH.

72. Personal pronouns in the nominative case are always expressed in French, differing in this respect from Italian and other languages.

*Examples.*

Je parle	I speak.
Tu parles	thou speakest.
Il boit	he drinks.
Elle chante	she sings.
Nous donnons	we give.
Vous dansez	you dance.
Ils or elles dorment	they sleep.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, personal pronouns are generally omitted in the nominative, except for the sake of emphasis or to avoid ambiguity. They are given here in order to show the agreement of the verb.

*Examples.*

Io parlo	I speak.
Tu canti	thou singest.
Egli beve	he drinks.
Ella balla	she dances.
Noi diamo	we give.
Voi cantate	you sing.
Eglino or elleno sono	they are.

73. In sentences which are interrogative the pronoun } usually follows the verb.      } Same, when expressed.

*Examples.*

Êtes-vous persuadé ?	are you persuaded ?
Est-il heureux ?	is he happy ?

*Examples.*

Avete voi il libro ?	have you the book ?
Possiamo noi entrare ?	may we enter ?

# PRONOUNS.

## Personal Pronouns.

### Nominative Case.

SPANISH.

} Same.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Examples.*

- |                   |                 |
|-------------------|-----------------|
| Yo he visto       | I have seen.    |
| Tu has venido     | thou hast come. |
| Él habla          | he speaks.      |
| Ella condena      | she condemns.   |
| Nosotros somos    | we are.         |
| Vosotros teméis   | you fear.       |
| Ellos, ellas, han | they have.      |

*Examples.*

- |                          |                |
|--------------------------|----------------|
| <i>Eu</i> cumpro         | I accomplish.  |
| <i>Tu</i> mandas         | thou orderest. |
| <i>Elle</i> falla        | he speaks.     |
| <i>Ella</i> come         | she eats.      |
| <i>Nós</i> temos amado   | we have loved. |
| <i>Vós</i> amais         | you love.      |
| <i>Elles ; ellas</i> são | they are.      |

} Same.

} Same.

*Examples.*

- |                                 |                        |
|---------------------------------|------------------------|
| ¿No es <i>ella</i> mi hermana ? | is she not my sister ? |
| ¿Están <i>ellos</i> aquí ?      | are they here ?        |

*Examples.*

- |                                  |                             |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Quantos filhos tem <i>ella</i> ? | how many children has she ? |
| Que idade tem <i>elle</i> ?      | how old is he ?             |

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

74. *Moi, toi, lui, eux (m.), elles (f.)* are employed in the following instances :—

- 1<sup>st</sup>, When in answer to a question.
- 2<sup>d</sup>, When coming after a comparative.
- 3<sup>d</sup>, When joined by a conjunction to a noun or pronoun.
- 4<sup>th</sup>, When followed by *qui, que, seul*, or a participle present.
- 5<sup>th</sup>, When following It is, it was, &c.

*Examples.*

*Qui frappe à la porte ?*  
(Who knocks at the door?) *Moi.*

*Je suis plus riche que lui.*

I am richer than he.

*Ma sœur et moi.*

My sister and I.

*Moi qui suis son frère.*

I who am his brother.

*Lui seul l'a fait.*

He alone has done it.

*Eux voyant que la chose était inutile.*

They seeing the thing was useless.

*C'est moi.*

It is I.

## ITALIAN.

The Italians, in all these instances, use the pronouns *io, tu, &c.*, except after a comparison, because then the pronoun is governed by a preposition.

*Examples.*

*Chi ha fatto questo ?*  
(Who has done this?) *Io (I.)*  
*Mia sorella ed io (m.) siamo più ricchi di lui.*  
My sister and I are richer than he.

## PRONOUNS.

81

### SPANISH.

In Spanish the pronouns *yo*, *tu*, &c., are here employed without exception.

#### *Examples.*

- ¿Quién llama á la puerta? *Yo.*  
Who knocks at the door? I.  
El es mas joven que *tu.*  
He is younger than thou.

### PORTUGUESE.

Same of *eu*, *tu*, &c.

#### *Examples.*

- Quem é? *Eu.*  
Who is it? I.  
Elle é mais rico que *tu.*  
He is richer than thou.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

75. "Tu," thou, is employed in addressing relations and friends with whom we are very intimate. It can also be used by a master to his servant, and in any case where inferiority is distinctly acknowledged; likewise, as a mark of contempt. In all other instances "vous" is employed; as

Comment *vous* portez-vous Madame? (or Messieurs.)

How do you do, Madam? (or Gentlemen.)

76. When "vous" is not made use of in a plural sense, the adjective or participle is put in the singular number, and agrees in gender with the person addressed.

*Examples.*

- (Addressing a man)    Vous êtes étonné.  
                             You are astonished.  
   (     ,      a woman) Vous êtes estimée.  
                             You are esteemed.

The rules which direct the use of personal pronouns in the nominative case having been given, we will now, before proceeding to those of the dative and accusative cases, offer some remarks on what is usually found somewhat difficult in the study of foreign languages—namely, the right application of pronouns as *direct* and *indirect*

## ITALIAN.

The second person singular is used by the Italians in the same manner as "tu" in French, but when addressing a superior, or one with whom they are not familiar, they use the third person, as follows:

Come sta *ella*?

How do you do, Sir? (or Madam.)

(applicable to either lady or gentleman.)

Come stanno *le loro Signorie*?

How do you do, Gentlemen? (or Ladies.)

In Italian the adjective and participle agree with the title.

*Example.*

- É *ella soddisfatta*?  
     Are you, Sir, or Madam, satisfied?

## SPANISH.

Same as regards second person.

The Spaniards in formal conversation use “*usted*,” abbrev. of *vuestra merced* (your worship), and in the plural “*ustedes*”: they apply to both genders, the verb and possessive pronoun being both put in the third person, as—

*i* Este es *su* libro de Vmd. Señora ?

Is this your book, Madam ?

*i* Como estan Vmds. Señores ?

How do you do, Gentlemen ?

*Remark.*—“Usted” is contracted in writing thus, Vmd., and an *s* is added for the plural.

The adjective and participle agree, as in French, with the person addressed, *not*, as in Italian, with the title.

*Example.*

*i* Esta buena, Señora ?  
Are you well, Madam ?

## PORTUGUESE.

Same as regards second person singular and plural.

The Portuguese, in formal conversation, use the words *Vossa Mercê* (Note *a.*) (your worship): they apply to both genders, the verb and possessive pronoun being both put in the third person, as in Spanish.

*Examples.*

Como estão vmc̄es. ? How do you do ?

(applicable to gentlemen or ladies.)

Que idade tem seu irmão ? How old is your brother ?

*Remark.*—The abbreviation is—*V.*, *Vm.*, or *Vmce.*, plural, *Vmc̄es*.

} Same.

*Example.*

A senhora está boa ?  
Are you well, madam ?

---

*objects*, or *regimens* of the verb. A little attention bestowed upon this subject at the outset will materially assist the learner. The pronoun is in the *accusative* case when governed by the verb without a preposition either expressed or understood, as, I love him—je l'aime. The action of the verb here falls *immediately* on the

Note *a.*—Pronounced familiarly thus : *vossmessay*, also *vossay*.

## PRONOUNS.

pronoun *him*, which therefore becomes the *direct object*. The pronoun is the *indirect object* when it admits of a preposition expressed or understood, and another word in the sentence receives the direct action of the verb, as, "I gave him the pen—Io *gli* detti la penna." In this case the pen was given *to* him, the preposition *to* being understood, consequently the pronoun *him* is put in the *dative case*. Another example: "I wrote to her—Yo *le* escribí,"—*her* is in the *dative case*, because *something written to her* is understood. It may be noted here that the Spaniards and Portuguese frequently add a preposition and another pronoun to do away with any ambiguity when the indirect regimen, as in the last example, can convey two different meanings; *le* in the *dative* is the

### Accusative Case.

#### FRENCH.

77. Personal Pronouns in the accusative case, or, in other words, as *direct objects* of the verb, are thus expressed in French :

#### SINGULAR.

#### PLURAL.

me      me

us      nous

thee      te

you      vous

him      le  
her      la

them      les  
m. and f.

#### SINGULAR.

me      mi

us      ci

thee      ti

you      vi

him      lo or il  
her      la

them (m.) li, gli  
them (f.) le

and are placed before the verb in simple tenses, and } Same.  
before the auxiliary in compound tenses.

same in both genders, to distinguish which it is more correct to say, "Yo *le* escribí á *ella*—I wrote to her," "Yo *le* escribí á *él*—I wrote to him." Were the English words "I give him" literally translated into any of the foreign languages here treated—for instance, *je le donne*—they would mean that the man himself is actually given, and not that *something* understood is given to him. This shows the great importance of studying the distinction between personal pronouns as *direct* objects in the *accusative* case, and as *indirect* objects in the *dative* case.

## Accusative Case.

## SPANISH.

In Spanish thus :

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese thus :

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

me	me	á mi	us	<small>{ nos (m. and f.)</small>	me	me	a mim	us	nos	a nós	
				<small>{ á nosotros (m.)</small>						(Note a.)	
				<small>{ á nosotras (f.)</small>							
thee	te	á ti	you	<small>{ os (m. and f.)</small>	thee	te	a ti	you	vos	a vós	
				<small>{ á vosotros (m.)</small>							
				<small>{ á vosotras (f.)</small>							
him	le	á él	them (m.)	los	á ellos	him	o	a elle	them (m.)	os	a elles
her	la	á ella	them (f.)	las	á elllas	her	a	a ella	them (fem.)	as	a elllas

} Same.

} They are placed sometimes before and as frequently after the verb.

Note a.—Observe that *nos* and *vos*, in the accusative case, are written without the accent, which they always take in the nominative, and after prepositions.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Il me connaît.*  
He knows me.  
*Vous ne la verrez pas.*  
You will not see her.  
*Ils nous ont flattés.*  
They have flattered us.  
*Ne les connaissez-vous pas ?*  
Do you not know them ?

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Egli *mi* domanda.  
He asks for me.  
Non *la* sorprenderete.  
You will not surprise her.  
*Ci* hanno ingannati.  
They have deceived us.  
Non *li* conoscete ?  
Do you not know them ?

## Dative Case.

Personal pronouns in the dative case, or in other } Same.  
words, as *indirect objects* of the verb, are as follows:

## 78. (When the preposition is understood.)

me	me	us	nous
thee	te	you	vous
him	lui	{ them	leur
her	lui		

*Examples.*

*Il me parle* he speaks to me.  
*Je lui donne* I give to him.  
*Nous leur écrirons* we will write to them.

## (Preposition understood.)

me	mi	us	ci
thee	ti	you	vi
him	gli	{ them	le
her	le		

*Examples.*

Egli *mi* parla  
Io *gli* scriverò  
*Ci* parlano  
he speaks to me.  
I will write to him.  
they speak to us.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Estos versos *me* inspiraron.

These verses inspired me.

*Te* amo mucho.

I love thee much.

Algo *os* ha impulsado á venir.

Something has impelled you to come.

Yo *los* tengo aqui.

I have them here.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

O Céo *vos* guarde.

Heaven preserve you.

Conheço-*a* de nome.

I know her by name.

Como! já *nos* deixa?

What! do you leave us already?

Eu *as* darei ao gravador.

I will give them to the engraver.

## Dative Case.

} Same.

} Same.

## (Preposition understood.)

me	me	us	nos
thee	te	you	os
him	{ le	{ them	les
her			

*Examples.*

Te diré	I will tell thee.
No <i>os</i> debo nada	I owe you nothing.
El <i>les</i> da alguna cosa	he gives them something.

## (Preposition understood.)

me	me	us	nos
thee	te	you	vos
him	{ lhe	{ them	elles
her			m. and f. } elles

*Examples.*

Que <i>vos</i> havia dado o conde.
Which the count had given you.
Nada <i>lhe</i> posso dizer.
I can say nothing to him (or her.)

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

79. (When the preposition is expressed.)

To me	à moi	To us	à nous
„ thee	à toi	„ you	à vous
„ him	à lui	„ them (m.)	à eux
„ her	à elle	„ them (f.)	à elles

*Example.*

Adressez-vous à moi address yourself to me.

## ITALIAN.

(Preposition expressed.)

To me	a me	To us	a noi
„ thee	a te	„ you	a voi
„ him	a lui	„ them }	{ a loro
„ her	a lei	m. and f.	}

*Example.*

Scrivereò a lei I will write to her.

## With the Infinitive Mood.

80. In French the personal pronoun is placed before a verb in the infinitive.

The pronoun is placed after the infinitive, which then suppresses its final *e* or *re* when the verb ends in *rre*.

*Examples.*

Je vais <i>le</i> voir	I am going to see him.
Il faut <i>les</i> vaincre	We must conquer them.

*Examples.*

Possiamo parlargli	we can speak to him.
Voglio condurla	I wish to conduct her.

When the pronoun is employed with two verbs it can be placed either next to the one that governs it, or it may be separated from it. The former, however, is preferable. } Same.

## SPANISH.

(Preposition expressed.)

To me	á mi	To us	á nosotros, á nosotras (f.)
„ thee	á ti	„ you	á vosotros, á vosotras
„ him	á él	„ them (m.)	á ellos
„ her	á ella	„ them (f.)	á ellas

*Example.*

No dirás nada á él thou shalt say nothing to him.

## PORTUGUESE.

(Preposition expressed.)

To me	a mim	To us	a nós
„ thee	a ti	„ you	a vós
„ him	a ele	„ them (m.)	a elles
„ her	a ella	„ (f.)	a ellas

*Example.*

Falla a vós he speaks to you.

## With the Infinitive Mood.

In Spanish also the pronoun is placed after the verb in the infinitive, and is joined to it.

The Portuguese pronoun is placed either *before* or *after* the infinitive, to which, in the latter case, it is united by a hyphen. If put *before* the infinitive, the pronoun is joined by a hyphen to the verb which precedes.

*Examples.*

Para enseñarme	to instruct me.
Sin haberos dado	without having given you.

*Examples.*

Devo-vos dizer.
I ought to tell you.
Vindo visita-la (Note a) e conhecê-la.
Coming to visit and become acquainted with her.

} Same.

} The pronoun with two verbs may also precede them both.

Note a.—The final *r* of the verb is suppressed when the infinitive is followed by the pronouns elle, ella, elles, ellas, and these are changed into lo, la, los, las. Some writers place an accent on the vowel before the *r* which is dropped : *vé-lo* (to see him, being a contraction of *ver-elle*.)

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

On peut *les* vaincre  
or, On *les* peut vaincre      } We can conquer them.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Voglio parlargli  
or, *Gli* voglio parlare      } I wish to speak to him.

## With the Imperative Mood.

81. Personal pronouns, whether *direct* or *indirect*, accompanied by a verb in the imperative mood, (except in the third persons singular and plural,) are placed immediately after the verb when employed affirmatively.

The pronoun, in such a case, is joined to the verb by a hyphen.

*Examples.*

Suivons- <i>les</i>	let us follow them.
Dites- <i>moi</i>	tell me.
Sauve- <i>toi</i>	save thyself.

Observe that in the above instances *moi* and *toi* instead of *me* and *te* are used; but when followed by *en*, they are written *m'*, *t'*, as

Donnez- <i>m'en</i>	give me some.
---------------------	---------------

82. When the imperative is *negatively* employed, the } pronoun precedes the verb.

*Example.*

*Ne me dites pas cela!*      do not tell me that!

} Same.

In Italian the pronoun is joined to the verb when following it.

*Examples.*

Dammi	give me.
Mandateci	send us.
Permettetemi	allow me.

*Remark.*—When a verb ends in a vowel accented, or has only one syllable, the initial letter of the pronoun is doubled, as *Dammi* (give me), *parlommi* (he spoke to me). “*Gli*” is excepted, as *Digli* (tell him).

*Example.*

*Non ci mandate via*      do not send us away.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Voy á *darle* el libro  
or, *Le* voy á dar el libro.  
I am going to give him the book.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*

Depois de *lhe* ter feito atravessar os jardins.  
After having made him pass through the gardens.

## With the Imperative Mood.

} Same.

} Same as Italian.

} Same.

The pronoun is joined to the verb by a hyphen, as in French.

*Dime* con quien andas. Tell me with whom thou goest.  
*Dejadme* salir. Let me go out.  
*Salvemonos.* Let us save ourselves.

*Remark.*—When nos and vos are joined to the verb in the first and second persons plural, the final letter of the verb is suppressed, as above.

Deixa-me  
Dai-me azeite  
Faça-nos uma salada

*Examples.*  
leave me.  
give me some oil.  
make us a salad.

} Same.

*Example.*

*No* nos desanimemos Let us not be discouraged.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Não* me toque do not touch me.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

83. When two pronouns accompany the imperative, one in the accusative or direct, the other in the dative or indirect object, the accusative is put first when used affirmatively, and second in a negative sentence, except with the third person as an indirect regimen.

*Examples.*Donnez-*le-moi*

give it me.

Dites-*le-leur*

tell it to them.

Ne *me le* donnez pas.

do not give it me.

Ne *le leur* dites pas

do not tell it to them.

## ITALIAN.

The Italian rule differs, the dative or indirect regimen being always placed first.

*Examples.*

Datemelo

give it me.

Mandataglielo

send it to him.

Non *me lo* date

do not give it to me.

Non *glielo* mandate

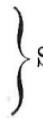
do not send it to him.

*Remark.*—Both the pronouns are put after the imperative verb in affirmative, and before in negative } Same.  
sentences.

## PRONOUNS.

93

### SPANISH.

 Same as Italian.

#### *Examples.*

- Vuelvemelos.
- Return them to me.
- Enséñeselos (Note a).
- Show them to him, (her, or them).
- No me los vuelve.
- Do not return them to me.
- No *se los* enséñe.
- Do not show them to him.

 Same.

 Same.

### PORTEGUESE.

#### *Examples.*

- |         |                  |
|---------|------------------|
| Dai-mo  | give it to me.   |
| Dai-mos | give them to me. |

*Remark.*—Mo and mos are contractions of *me o* and *me os*, as explained further on.

 Same.

Note a.—When two pronouns in Spanish follow each other as above, *se* is used for the *indirect regimen* in the *third person singular* or *plural*: this is to avoid unpleasant repetition of sound.

## PRONOUNS.

## It, They, Them.

## FRENCH.

84. As French nouns denoting inanimate objects are either of the masculine or feminine gender (having no neuter), it follows that the pronouns relating to them, and which in English are expressed by it, they, them, must be the same as those employed for persons—viz., il, elle, and plurals, as subjects, le, la, les, as direct objects, or in the accusative case. In answer to the question, Où est le livre ? (where is the book ?) the French reply, *Il* est sur la table (it is on the table)—livre being masculine. But when asked, Où est la plume ? (where is the pen ?) the answer is, *Elle* est ici, donnez-la-moi (it is here, give it to me)—plume being feminine.

85. Great caution must be used in the employment of these pronouns : they assume the same gender and number as the substantives to which they relate when the noun is determined in a phrase ; for instance, Étes vous la reine ? (are you *the* queen ?)—Je *la* suis (I am)—meaning some particular queen. But if the question be, Étes vous reine ?—meaning *a* queen—the reply is, Je *le* suis.

## ITALIAN.

Same rule applies with regard to lo, la, li, le, and ne, in the accusative ; but the nominative need not be expressed.

## Examples.

Dov' è il libro ?	where is the book ?
È sulla tavola	it is on the table.
We can say, however,	<i>Egli</i> è vero or, è vero } it is true.

The Italians would answer to similar questions, “*Lo* sono,” “noi *lo* siamo,” &c., and employ the pronoun “*lo*” also in reference to something of which the gender is not denoted, as “*Io lo so* (I know it).

## PRONOUNS.

95

### It, They, Them.

SPANISH.

Same of el, la, lo, los, las, in the accusative.

The nominative need not be expressed, as in Italian.

The same of the Spanish, who also employ the pronoun "lo," as "Yo *lo* creo" (I think it); "Ya *lo* sabia" (I knew it already).

PORTEGUESE.

Same of o, a, os, as (Note *a*), in the accusative. These, when accompanied by the pronouns me, te, lhe, lhes (indirect regimens), are thus used :—

Mo, ma, mos, mas, instead of me o, me a, me os,  
me as, or m'o, &c.

To, ta, tos, tas, instead of te o, te a, te os, te as,  
or t'o, &c.

Lho, lha, lhos, lhas, instead of lhe o, lhe a, lhe os,  
lhe as.

That is, the pronoun in the oblique case drops the e, and is joined to the accusative : Nos and vos change the s into l, as Nolo, vola, nolos, &c.

Same of the Portuguese, who employ the pronoun O, as, Eu o entendo ; or, Entendo-o (I understand so)

When two or more pronouns accompany a verb in a simple tense, the *nominative* should be *expressed* if they are placed *before* the verb, but may be omitted when following : as,

Eu *to* darei, or darei-*to* I will give it thee.

Note *a*.—The pronouns o, a, os, as, after a verb in the third person plural ending in o, take the letter n for the sake of euphony : as, amão-no—they love it (or him.) The preterite definite of fazer (to make) is thus changed, eu fiz-lo ; elle fê-lo ; fizemo-lo (I, he, we did it,) instead of eu fiz-o, &c. Eis (behold) thus : ei-lo, ei-la, &c. Verbs ending in r, s, or z, often change these letters into l before the pronoun, for the sake of euphony.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

Again : Etes vous *les* hommes ? (are you *the* men ?)  
nous *les* sommes.

Etes vous *des* hommes ? (are you men ?)  
nous *le* sommes.

When *le* is invariable it is equivalent to *so* or *it* in English.

Je <i>le</i> crois	I believe <i>so</i> .
Je <i>le</i> sais	I know <i>it</i> .

86. The particle "*y*" is of very frequent use, expressing "to" or "of it," "of them," &c. Some of its various applications will be seen by the following } instances. The Italians frequently use *ci* and *vi* in similar

*Examples.*

J'*y* pense ; j'*y* consens.  
I am thinking *of it* ; I consent *to it*.  
N'*y* faites pas attention.  
Pay no attention *to it*.  
On va *y* répondre ; or, On *y* va répondre.  
They are going to answer *it*.  
Prenez cette lettre et *y* mettez un cachet.  
Take this letter and put a seal *upon it*.  
Il *y* va de ma vie.  
It is as much as my life is worth.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Mi *ci* sono al fine risoluto.  
I am at last resolved *upon it*.  
Non *vi* è remedio.  
There is no remedy *for it*.  
Non è via da *uscirci*.  
There is no way of getting out *of it*.

Note.—As a rule, *y* is used only in relation to *things*; but some of the best French writers, and amongst them Madame de Sévigné and Racine, employ it also in relation to persons.

## PRONOUNS.

97

### SPANISH.

### PORtUGUESE.

The Spaniards have no corresponding word, but make use of the usual pronoun with a preposition : for instance,—

“J'y pense,” which in French means, “I am thinking of it,” is translated into Spanish, “Pienso en ello.” Again, “Fiez-vous-y” (trust in him), is rendered by “Fiese vd. de él.”

Same : for, “I am thinking of it,” a Portuguese would say, *Penso nisso* (em isso).

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

87. Of or by him, her, &c., and some, are often expressed by the pronoun "en," which is of both genders and numbers.

*Examples.*

Il faut <i>en</i> parler	it is necessary to speak <i>of it</i> .
Vous pouvez <i>en</i> profiter	you may profit <i>by it</i> .
J'aime trop la valeur pour <i>en</i> être jaloux	I love courage too much to be jealous of it.
Il <i>en</i> était chéri, or Il était chéri <i>d'eux</i>	{ he was beloved by them.
Allez-vous- <i>en</i>	go away from here.

## ITALIAN.

"Ne" is employed by the Italians in like manner.

*Examples.*

Questa signorina vi piace, <i>ne</i> parlate frequentemente.
This young lady pleases you, you speak of her frequently.
Quella malattia è pericolosa <i>ne</i> potrebbe morire.
That complaint is dangerous, he might die of it.
Parlate di moneta : <i>ne</i> avete ? Si <i>ne</i> ho.
You speak of money : have you any ? Yes, I have some.
Andatevene.
Go away.

## SPANISH.

The same remarks as to preceding rule apply here.  
 } The Spaniards would write, de él, en ello, or esto, &c. } Same.

*Examples.*

Me alegro *de ello*. I am glad of it.  
 Me admiro *de esto*. I wonder at it.

## PORTUGUESE.

Quero *d'isso*.  
 Lembro-me *delle*.

*Examples.*

I wish some of this.  
 I remember it (or, am mindful of it.)

## PRONOUNS.

## Possessive Pronouns.

The usual but, strictly speaking, incorrect system of calling the words *my, thy, his, her, our, your, their*, possessive *pronouns*, will be adopted in this work for the sake of convenience. Bescherelle frères, in their "Grammaire Nationale," place under the heading of "possessive pronouns" *mine, thine, &c.*; correctly separating from this classification *my, thy, &c.*, which they, with a few other grammarians, denominate "possessive adjectives," the latter always accompanying a noun expressed, whilst the words *mine, thine, &c.*, stand in the place of a noun, conveying at the same time the idea of the object expressed, and to whom it belongs: they are, therefore, to all

## Conjunctive.

		FRENCH.				ITALIAN.	
SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Masc.	Fem.	Both genders.		Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
Mon	ma	Mes	my	Il mio	la mia	I miei	le mie my
ton	ta	tes	thy	Il tuo	la tua	I tuoi	le tue thy
son	sa	ses	his, her, its	Il suo	la sua	I suoi	le sue his, her, its
notre	notre	nos	our	Il nostro	la nostra	I nostri	le nostre our
votre	votre	vos	your	Il vostro	la vostra	I vostri	le vostre your
leur	leur	leurs	their	Il loro	la loro	I loro	le loro their

(Note a.)

Note a.—Sometimes the best writers dispense with the article before a possessive pronoun. Boccaccio says: "ho fatto *mie piccole mercatanzie*"—I have made my little traffic; and Dante writes, "matto è chi spera che *nosta ragione*," &c.—he is mad who expects that our reason, &c.

Before a noun of title or kindred in the *singular* number, possessive pronouns (except *loro*) drop the article: as, dov è *vostro fratello*?—where is your brother? Should an adjective or other word intervene, or the noun be a diminutive, such as *fratellino*, the article is used.

## Possessive Pronouns.

intents and purposes, pronouns. We will, however, distinguish the two classes by naming the first " Possessive Pronouns Conjunctive" and the last " Possessive Pronouns Disjunctive." It may also be here remarked, that the French, Italians, and others, contrary to the English, make the pronouns agree with the thing possessed, as "*sa maison*," which words, isolated, mean either *his* or *her* house; but the context shows the gender of the possessor.

The Possessive Pronouns Conjunctive are as follows :—

## Conjunctive

SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE.			
SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
Mi	mi	Mis	mis	my		Meu	minha
tu	tu	tus	tus	thy		teu	tua
su	su	sus	sus	his, her, its, their		seu	sua
nuestro	nuestra	nuestros	nuestras	our		nosso	nossa
vuestro	vuestra	vuestros	vuestras	your		voSSO	voSSA
su	su	sus	sus	his, &c., or their		seu	sua

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

88. The equivalents of my, thy, &c., agree in gender and number with the substantives to which they relate. } Same.  
The following examples will show their application.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Mon père	my father
Ta mère	thy mother
Son attention	his or her attention
Leur enfant	their child
Notre fortune	our fortune

## PLURAL.

Nos frères	our brothers
Vos sœurs	your sisters
Ses bontés	his favours
Leurs voitures	their carriages
Leurs richesses	their riches

## ITALIAN.

Il mio coltello	my knife
La tua casa	thy house
Il suo baule	his trunk
La loro tavola	their table

## PLURAL.

I miei amici	my friends
Le vostre cortine	your curtains
I suoi letti	his beds
Le loro tavole	their tables

Observe that before a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, mon, ton, son, are used for the sake of euphony, whatever may be the gender of the noun.—  
(Note a.)

Note a.—The possessive pronoun *leur*, which takes an *s* in the plural, must not be confounded with the personal pronoun, which is invariable.

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Spanish, these pronouns, except *nuestro* and *vuestro*, }  
are common to both genders. They all add s for the } Same as French.  
plural.

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Mi casa	my house
Tu sombrero	thy hat
Su memoria	his memory
Nuestro libro	our book
Vuestra madre	your mother
Su valor	their courage

## PLURAL.

Mis libros	my books
Tus virtudes	thy virtues
Sus hijos	his sons
Nuestras casas	our houses
Vuestros sombreros	your hats
Sus costumbres	their habits

*Examples.*

## SINGULAR.

Minha mai	my mother
teu pai	thy father
sua mobilia	his furniture
nosso amigo	our friend
vosso dever	your duty
sua desgraça	their misfortune

## PLURAL.

Meus livros	my books
tuas casas	thy houses
seus parafagos	his screens
nossos amigos	our friends
vosso deveres	your duties
sus desgraças	their misfortunes

*Remark.*—When employing *su* or *sus* a personal pronoun is frequently added in the genitive case, by which all doubt as to the possessor will be avoided, as *su libro de ella*, her book.

} Same; as *seu livro della*, her book.

## PRONOUNS.

FRENCH.

ITALIAN.

89. These pronouns accompanying two or more substantives should be repeated before each, although this rule is not always adhered to.

*Example.*

*Son frère et sa soeur* (his brother and sister)  
is more general and more correct than *ses frère et sœur*.

In Italian they are always repeated before each noun.

*Example.*

*Mio padre, mia madre, ed i miei fratelli sono venuti*  
My father, my mother, and my brothers have come.

90. When a pronoun is employed with two adjectives qualifying the same noun, and both having an analogous meaning, it need not be repeated.

*Examples.*

Nos sages et doctes pères.  
Our wise and learned fathers.  
Son bon et digne ami.  
His good and worthy friend.

} Same.

*Examples.*

*Il mio dotto e saggio padre.*  
My learned and wise father.  
*Il mio buono ed ecceLENte amico.*  
My good and excellent friend.

## SPANISH.

The Spaniards more frequently than not repeat the pronoun. As in English, however, they are guided by the emphasis required. It is better, as a rule, when the first noun is in the singular number and the second in the plural, to repeat the pronoun, making it agree, of course, with its noun ; also when the nouns are of different genders.

*Examples.*

Ha perdido *su* padre, *su* madre y *sus* hermanos.  
He has lost his father, his mother, and his brothers.  
Observaba mucho todos *mis* pasos palabras y movimientos.  
He observed much all my steps, words, and movements.  
Para llevar *mi* ropa y *mis* ducados.  
To carry my clothes and my dollars.

} Same.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Todos os povos das provincias tinham *sua* cidade, *seu* centro.  
All the people of the provinces had their city, their centre.  
Vio morrer todos *os seus* filhos, netos e contemporaneos.  
His sons, grandsons, and contemporaries, he saw them all die.

*Examples.*

*Mi* sabio é (Note a) inteligente hermano.  
My wise and intelligent brother.  
*Mi* util y ventajosa compra.  
My useful and advantageous purchase.

*Meu* sabio e intelligente irmão.  
My wise and intelligent brother.  
*Seu* bom e digno amigo.  
His good and worthy friend.

Note a.—The conjunction *y* changes into *é* before a word beginning with *i* or *hi*.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

91. The article instead of a possessive pronoun is used when a personal pronoun in the same sentence clearly indicates the possessor.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

<i>J'ai mal à la tête</i>	my head aches.
<i>Il a les yeux rouges</i>	he has red eyes.

*Examples.*

<i>Si ruppe il braccio</i>	he broke his arm.
<i>Mettiti il capello</i>	put on thy hat.
<i>Cavatevi le scarpe</i>	take off your shoes.

92. The French in such phrases as "A friend of mine," "a book of yours," express their meaning by

*Un de mes amis.*

*Un de vos livres.*

The Italians say—

*Un mio amico ; or, uno de' miei amici.*

*Un vostro libro ; or, uno dei vostri libri.*

93. In speaking to a person of his relations, they say,

*Monsieur votre père.*

*Madame votre mère, &c.*

The pronoun in Italian precedes the title, and takes an article as a word intervenes between it and the noun, as

*Il vostro signor padre.*

*La vostra signora madre, &c.*

## SPANISH.

} Same.

*Examples.*

- |                                |                        |
|--------------------------------|------------------------|
| Me duele <i>la</i> cabeza      | my head aches.         |
| Él se ha roto <i>la</i> pierna | he has broken his leg. |

The Spanish say—

- Un amigo mio.  
Un libro vuestro.

} Here they employ the third person, and say—

- Su señor padre.  
Su señora madre.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Examples.*

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| Dóe-me <i>a</i> garganta.                       |  |
| My throat aches.                                |  |
| Fará Vm. bem de meter os pés em agua quente.    |  |
| You will do well to put your feet in hot water. |  |

The Portuguese say—

- Um dos meus amigos.  
Um dos vossos livros.

} Same : as,

- O senhor seu pai.  
A senhora sua mai.

## PRONOUNS.

## Disjunctive.

## FRENCH.

The following is a list of these pronouns :—

SINGULAR.	
Masc.	Fem.
Le mien	la mienne (mine).
Le tien	la tienne (thine).
Le sien	la sienne (his, hers, its).
Le nôtre (Note a)	la nôtre (ours).
Le vôtre	la vôtre (yours).
Le leur	la leur (theirs).

PLURAL.	
Masc.	Fem.
Les miens	les miennes.
Les tiens	les tiennes.
Les siens	les siennes.
Les nôtres	for both genders.
Les vôtres	
Les leurs	

94. These pronouns agree in gender and number with  
the object possessed. } Same.

## Examples.

Un cheval comme <i>le mien</i>	a horse like mine.
Une main comme <i>la sienne</i>	a hand like his.
Nos amis et <i>les vôtres</i>	our friends and yours.
Vos livres et <i>les leurs</i>	your books and theirs.

Note a.—Observe that *nôtre* and *vôtre*, preceded by the article, take a circumflex accent.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian the same as the "Conjunctive," which serve for either my or mine :—

SINGULAR.	
Masc.	Fem.
Il mio	la mia (mine).
Il tuo	la tua (thine).
Il suo	la sua (his, hers, its).
Il nostro	la nostra (ours).
Il vostro	la vostra (yours).
Il loro	la loro (theirs).

PLURAL.	
Masc.	Fem.
I miei	le mie.
I tuoi	le tue.
I suoi	le sue.
I nostri	le nostre.
I vostri	le vostre.
I loro	le loro.

## Examples.

Il mio cavallo ed <i>il vostro</i>	my horse and yours.
Mia sorella e <i>la vostra</i>	my sister and yours.
Le sue case e <i>le nostre</i>	his houses and ours.
I suoi libri ed <i>i loro</i>	his books and theirs.

## Disjunctive.

## SPANISH.

The Spanish are as follows :

	SINGULAR.	
Add the Article.	Masc.	Fem.
Mio		mia (mine).
Tuyo		tuya (thine).
Suyo		suya (his, hers, its).
Nuestro		nuestra (ours).
Vuestro		vuestra (yours).
Suyo		suya (theirs).
PLURAL.		

The plural is formed by simply adding *s* to the singular.

} Same.

*Examples.*

- Vuestro caballo y *el mio*      your horse and mine.
- Su hermana y *la vuestra*      his sister and yours.
- Mis criados y *los vuestros*      my servants and yours.
- Vuestros amigos y *los suyos*      your friends and his.

## PORTUGUESE.

The Portuguese disjunctive pronouns are as follows :—

	SINGULAR.	
Add the Article.	Masc.	Fem.
	Meu	minha (mine).
	Teu	tua (thine).
	Seu	sua (his, hers, its).
	Nosso	nossa (ours).
	Vosso	vossa (yours).
	Seu	sua (theirs).
PLURAL.		

The plural is formed by adding *s* to the singular.

*Examples.*

- Vosso cavallo e *o meu*      your horse and mine.
- Sua irmã e *a vossa*      his sister and yours.
- Meus criados e *os vossos*      my servants and yours.
- Vossos amigos e *os seus*      your friends and his.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

95. A question as to whom a thing belongs is asked and answered in the following manner :

*Examples.*

À qui est ce livre ?	whose is this book ?
C'est <i>le mien</i> , or C'est à <i>moi</i>	it is mine.
C'est à Monsieur B—	it is Mr B.'s.

In Italian thus :

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Di chi è questo libro ?	whose is this book ?
È <i>mio</i>	it is mine.
È del Sigr. B—	it is Mr B.'s.

As seen in the above examples, these pronouns do not take the article when they come after the verb "to be" in the sense of *belonging to*.

96. Le *mien*, le *tien*, &c., are also employed substantively to denote what belongs to us in the shape of property or substance, and are necessarily in the singular masculine.

*Example.*

Il est soigneux <i>du sien</i> .	}
He is careful of his own (property.)	

Il *mio*, il *tuo*, &c., are used in like manner.

*Example.*

Vieni, e domanda <i>il tuo</i> .
Come, and demand thine own.

97. Les *miens*, les *tiens*, &c., are used substantively to signify relations, friends with whom we are very intimate, retainers, &c., and are always in the masculine plural.

*Example.*

C'est à nous à payer pour les crimes des <i>nôtres</i> .	}
It is for us to pay for the crimes of ours (friends.)	

I *miei*, i *tuoi*, &c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Il re vedendo la battaglia perduta, e abbandonato dai <i>suo</i> , &c.
The king seeing the battle lost, and abandoned by his own (troops.)

## SPANISH.

In Spanish thus :

*Examples.*

¿ De quien es este libro ?	whose is this book ?
Mio	mine
Es del Sr. B —	it is Mr B.'s.

} Same as Italian.

} El mio, et tuyo, &c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Ha cuidado del *suyo*.  
He takes care of his own.

} Los mios, los tuyos, &c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Ha atendido á la subsistencia de *los suyos*.  
He has provided for the subsistence of his relations.

## PORTUGUESE.

In Portuguese thus :

*Examples.*

De quem é este livro ?	whose is this book ?
E o meu	it is mine
E do Senhor B —	it is Mr B.'s

} The article should be used in Portuguese, thus differing from Italian and Spanish.

} Same of o meu, o teu, &c.

*Example.*

Ha cuidado *do seu*.  
He takes care of his own.

} Os meus, os teus, &c., follow the same rule.

*Example.*

Todos *os meus* morrerão.  
All my relations are dead.

## PRONOUNS.

## Demonstrative Pronouns.

On reference to the lists of pronouns and examples which follow, it will be observed that the Italians, Spaniards, and Portuguese divide their demonstrative pronouns into three classes, while the French language admits of only two: in the latter, "this" and "that" are both expressed by the same word, the place being denoted by the addition of an adverb. For instance, the equivalent of "*this book*" would be *ce livre*; "*that boy*," *ce garçon*. To indicate an object understood, the French would say for the English word "this" (meaning here, close to,)

## FRENCH.

In French, Demonstrative Pronouns are expressed as follows :

## SINGULAR.

Masc.	Fem.	
Ce, cet *	cette	this, that, it
Celui	celle	that
Celui-ci	celle-ci	this
Celui-là	celle-là	that
Ceci		this
Cela		that

## PLURAL.

Masc.	Fem.	
Ces	ces	these or those
Ceux	celles	those
Ceux-ci	celles-ci	those
Ceux-là	celles-là	those

## ITALIAN.

In Italian they are divided into three classes, as follows :

1st, Those which indicate the proximity of an object to the person who speaks, as—

Masc. Singular.		Fem. Singular.	
Questi,	{	this man	{ Costei
Costui	{	or person.	{ Questa

Masc. Plural.		Fem. Plural.	
Questi		Queste	these

Both genders.		
Costoro		these men, women, or persons.

## Demonstrative Pronouns.

"celui-ci," or, "celle-ci" (fem.), and for the word "that" (meaning there, at a distance,) "celui-là." The adverbs of place, *ici* (here, contracted) and *là* (there) are added. All the other languages have special words to express "this" and "that," as, in Italian, "*questo libro*," *this book*, "*quella casa*," *that house*; they do not, therefore, need an adverb of place, except for the sake of emphasis or to designate more particularly the place of the object pointed at.—(Note *a*.)

## SPANISH.

{ Same.

{ Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Este	esta	esto	this
Estos	estas	(no plural)	these

## PORTUGUESE.

{ Same.

{ Same. (Note *b*.)

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Este	esta	isto	this
Estes	estas	(no plural)	these

Note *a*.—When referring to two different subjects gone before, expressed in English by "the former" and "the latter," "*the former*" is expressed in French, by *celui-là*; Italian, by *quegli*; Spanish, by *aquel*; Portuguese, by *aquelle*: and "*the latter*" in French, by *celui-ci*; Italian, by *questi*; Spanish, by *este*; Portuguese, by *este*.

Note *b*.—When the preposition *de* or *em* accompanies a demonstrative pronoun, they generally form one word, as *d'este*, of this; *nessa*, of that; *daquelles*, of those. Sometimes *de* is expressed by *d'*, as *d'isso*, of this.

## FRENCH.

98. \*“Cet” is employed before a noun masculine singular beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

*Examples.*

- Ce* livre, *cet* homme, *cette* femme, et *ces* choses.  
 This (or that) book, man, woman, and things.  
*Votre* cheval et *celui* de votre frère.  
 Your horse and that of your brother.  
*Votre* opinion est *celle* de tout le monde.  
 Your opinion is that of all the world.  
*Vos* pleurs et *ceux* de votre père.  
 Your tears and those of your father.  
*Vos* lettres et *celles* qui sont adressées à mon ami.  
 Your letters and those addressed to my friend.  
*Celui* qui vous parle.  
 He who speaks to you.  
*Cet* ouvrage est *celui* d'un bon père ; or,  
*Cet* ouvrage est d'un bon père.  
 This work is that of a good father.  
*J'eus* *celui-ci*, mon père *celui-là*.  
 I had this, and my father that.  
*L'un* préfère *ceux-ci*, et l'autre *ceux-là*.  
 One prefers these, the other those.

Note a.—*Questa* is contracted in the following instances :—

Stamane	}	this morning.
Stamattina		

In lieu of *questa mattina*, &c.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

- \* *Questi* che non vuol parlare.  
 This man who does not wish to speak.  
*Questo* cavallo mi piace molto.  
 This horse pleases me much.  
*Questa* pera è dolce.  
 This pear is sweet.  
*Questi* giardini sono piacevoli.  
 These gardens are pleasant.  
*Queste* tavole sono ben fatte.  
 These tables are well made.

\* *Questi* in the first example is only used in the nominative singular, and always refers to a person. *Questo* and its variations are applied to things as well to persons.—(Note a.)

2nd, Those indicating the proximity of an object to the person spoken to :

Masc. Singular.	
Cotesti, cotestui	that person, or man.
Codesto, cotoesto	that.

Stasera	}	this evening.
Stanotte		

# PRONOUNS.

115

SPANISH.

PORtUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Ahora bien ; *esta* inteligencia, *esta* ciencia, *este* gusto  
perfeccionado, *este* language no podian ser, &c.

Well ; this intelligence, this learning, this perfect taste,  
this language could not be, &c.

Y à *esto*\* mi décidí.

And I decided on this.

*Examples.*

Todos *estes* objectos devem ser examinados.

All these objects should be examined.

*Esta* carta é favoravel.

This letter is favourable.

*Isto* deu-se principalmente no meio dia.

This happened principally in the middle of the day.

\* The Spanish language has a distinct neuter pronoun  
used in an indeterminate sense as above ; that is, no par- } Same.  
ticular object being pointed at.

} Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Ese	esa	eso	that
Esos	esas	(no plural)	those

} Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Esse	essa	isso	that
Esses	essas	(no plural)	those

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

*Ce qu'il y a de vrai.*

What (or that which) is true.

*Ce sont nos méthodes qui nous égarent.*

It is our systems which mislead us.

*Ce furent les mêmes personnes.*

They were the same persons.

*Est-ce un si grand malheur ?*

Is it such a misfortune ?

*Ce n'est pas un sot ; or, Il n'est pas un sot*

He is not a fool.

*C'est vrai ; or, Il est vrai.*

It is true.

*C'est clair.*

It is clear.

Le plus grand des plaisirs *c'est la reconnaissance.*

The greatest of pleasures is gratitude.

*Epargner les plaisirs c'est les multiplier.*

To be sparing of pleasures is to multiply them.

*Ceci me plaît.*

This pleases me.

*Cela est vrai.*

That is true.

99. After *celui*, *celle*, &c., it is usual, in sentences where a participle past follows, to place between them and the latter the pronoun *qui*, followed by the auxiliary

## ITALIAN.

Fem. Singular.

*Cotestei*

that person, or woman.

*Codesta, testa*

that

Masc. Plural.

*Codesti, cotesti*

those

Fem. Plural.

*Codeste, coteste*

those

*Cotestoro*

those persons

*Examples.*

*Cotesti* non mi piace.

That person does not please me.

Quanto vale *cotesto* panno ?

What is the value of that cloth ?

Ho bisogno di *cotesta* penna.

I want that pen.

Datemi *cotesti* libri.

Give me those books.

*Coteste* carte sono mie.

Those papers are mine.

*Cotesti* (first example) applies to a person, and is used only in the nominative singular.

*Cotesto* and its variations refer to things as well as to persons.

3rd, Those indicating the remoteness of an object both from the person speaking and the person spoken to.

Masc. Singular.

*Quegli, or colui*

that person or man.

*Quello*

that

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

*Ese* libro que tiene Vmd. en la mano.

That book which you have in your hand.

Quedaos esta tarde con nosotros y contadme como ha nacido en vos *esa* aficion á la lectura, *ese* sentimiento

de la poesia, y *esos* deseos por conocer á los hombres.

Remain with us this evening, and tell me how you have acquired *that* affection for reading, that poetical sentiment, and those wishes to know mankind.

*Eso* es cierto.

That is certain.

} Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Aquel	aquella	aquello	that.
Aquellos	aquellas	(no plural)	those.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Á nenhuma das tres ordens Gregas, nem á *essa* dos Romanos.

To none of the three Greek orders, nor to that of the Roman.

Até o ultimo seculo offerece a historia a existencia permanente *dessas* aldeias e *dessas* cidades.

To the latest age history shows the permanent existence of these villages and cities.

Em consequencia *disso*.

In consequence of this.

Não faço caso *disso*.

I do not mind that.

} Same.

Masc.	Fem.	Neuter.	
Aquelle	aquella	aquillo	that.
Aquelles	aquellas	(no plural)	those.

## FRENCH.

verb, as in the above example, “*vos lettres et celles qui sont adressées à mon ami*,” although “*vos lettres et celles adressées à mon ami*” would be grammatical. It is better, however, to adopt the former method.

100. “*Ce*” as a pronoun is used in a variety of ways, before the verb “*être*” in most of its tenses, in the singular or plural, or coming after the verb, as the examples show : *fût-ce*” is employed for both numbers, for it would not sound well to say “*furent-ce*” or “*fussent-ce*.” *Est-ce* should also be said instead of *seront-ce*.

101. Particular attention must be paid to the use of *c'est* instead of *il est*. When an adjective follows the verb, and it is necessary to use *que* or *de* after, *il* must be employed, not *ce*: as, *Il est juste qu'un meurtrier périsse* (it is right that a murderer should perish); *il est aisé de faire* (it is easy to do). *C'est* is generally used between two substantives, and between two infinitives where the equivalent of *ce* in English would be left out: as, *Le plus grand des plaisirs c'est*, &c.; *végéter, c'est mourir*.

102. *Ceci* and *cela* are only employed in respect to things. In familiar conversation *ça* is said instead of *cela*, as *ça ira*; comment *ça va-t-il*. *Cela* is sometimes

## ITALIAN.

Fem. Singular.			
Colei		that person or woman.	
Quella		that	
Masc. Plural.			Fem. Plural.
Quelli or quei	those	Quelle	those
Coloro		those persons.	

*Examples.*

*Quegli* che parla è mio padre.  
That man who (or he who) speaks is my father.

*Quel* ragazzo è molto cattivo.

That boy is very wicked.

*Quella* casa è bellina.

That house is pretty.

*Quei* modelli sono perfetti.

Those specimens are perfect.

*Quelle* signorine sono sorte.

Those young ladies have gone out.

*Quegli* (first example) applies to a person, and is only used in the nominative singular.

*Quello* and its variations refer to things as well as to persons.

*Note.*—*Quello* is used in the singular at the end of a phrase, and before *s impura*, or *z: quell'* before a vowel; *quel* before a noun masculine, beginning with a simple consonant; *quelli* in the plural is used at the end of a

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

*Aquel libro, y aquella carta que estan sobre la mesa.*  
That book and that letter which are on the table.  
*Yo no soy de aquellos amos ingratos y duros.*  
I am not one of those ungrateful and hard masters.  
*Aquellas muchachas que vimos la semana pasada.*  
Those girls whom we saw last week.  
*Aquello (neuter) es malo.*  
That is bad.

*Remark.*—In Spanish the definite article is often employed as a demonstrative : as,

*Los (or aquellos) que son sabios son felices.*  
Those who are wise are happy.

*Remark.*—*Estotro, esotro, &c.*, compounds of *este, ese, &c.*, and the word *otro* (other), are occasionally employed, varying according to gender and number.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

O nome *daquelle* principe feliz.  
The name of that happy prince.  
Nem estes conhecem *aquelles*.  
Nor do the latter know the former (or, these know those).  
Tenha a bondade de nos mostrar *aquellas* cartas, e *aquelle* documento.  
Have the goodness to show us those letters, and that document.

Same : as,  
 Teve missão diversa, *a* de principe philosopho, e *a* de principe legislador.  
 He had a varied mission, that of a prince-philosopher and that of a prince-legislator.

*Remark.*—The word *outro* (other) is often joined to these pronouns, thus :—

*Est'outro ; ess'outra ; aquell'otros* (this other, &c.)  
They sometimes are written in one word, as *Estoutro, &c.*

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

replaced by *ce*; but the former particularises more distinctly: as, *Cela est vrai*, or *c'est vrai*.

## ITALIAN.

phrase; *quegli* before a vowel, *s'impura*, or *z*; *quei*, or *que'* before any other consonant.

*Remarks.*—Costui, costei, costoro, colui, colei, coloro, are employed chiefly in poetry and in elevated diction; also as denoting contempt in ordinary conversation.

Questo and quello are frequently used in an indeterminate sense, some substantive being understood: as,

In questo egli sopravvenne.

At this moment he came up.

Non gli dite quello.

Do not tell him that.

## Relative Pronouns.

In French the relative pronouns are as follows:—

*Qui, que, quoi, lequel, dont.*

103. *Lequel* is composed of *quel* and the article *le*, and varies in gender and number as follows:—

SINGULAR.		
Masc.	Fem.	
Lequel	laquelle	which.
Duquel	de laquelle	of which.
Auquel	à laquelle	to which.
PLURAL.		
Lesquels	lesquelles	which.
Desquels	desquelles	of which.
Auxquels	auxquelles	to which.

In Italian they are,—

*Che, quale, cui, chi.*

*Quale* is used with the definite article in the following manner:—

SINGULAR.		
Masc.	Fem.	
Il quale	la quale	which.
Del quale	della quale	of which.
Al quale	alla quale	to which.
PLURAL.		
I quali	le quali	which.
Dei quali	delle quali	of which.
Ai quali	alle quali	to which.

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

## Relative Pronouns.

In Spanish they are,—

*Que, quien, cual, cuyo.*

*Cual* is also employed with the article, as follows :—

## SINGULAR.

Masc.	Fem.	
El cual	la cual	which.
Del cual	de la cual	of which.
Al cual	á la cual	to which.

## PLURAL.

Los cuales	las cuales	which.
De los cuales	de las cuales	of which.
Á los cuales	á las cuales	to which.

In Portuguese they are,—

*Que, quem, qual, cujo.*

*Qual* is also employed with the definite article, as follows :—

## SINGULAR.

Masc.	Fem.	
O qual	a qual	which.
Do qual	da qual	of which.
Ao qual	á qual	to which.

## PLURAL.

Os quaes	as quaes	which.
Dos quaes	das quaes	of which.
Aos quaes	ás quaes	to which.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

104. *Qui* expresses *who*, *which*, and *that*, as the subject or nominative of a verb, and relates to *persons* and *things*. } *Che* in like manner.

*Examples.*

- L'homme *qui* parle.
- The man who speaks.
- La femme *qui* chante.
- The woman who sings.
- Le cheval *qui* vient.
- The horse which is coming.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

- Il titolo *che* è dato.
- The title which is given.
- La donna *che* canta.
- The woman who is singing.
- Le signorine *che* parlano.
- The young ladies who are speaking.

105. *Qui* (whom), accompanied by a preposition, may take the place of *lequel*, *laquelle*, &c., but only when referring to persons. } *Cui* and *chi* in like manner.

*Examples.*

- Les hommes *avec qui* je causais.
- The men with whom I was speaking.
- L'enfant *à qui* je parle.
- The child to whom I speak.

*Examples.*

- Gli uomini *á cui* parlava.
- The men to whom I was speaking.
- Di chi* sono queste cose ?
- Whose things are these ?

106. *Qui* is called *absolute* when it has no antecedent expressed, and then relates only to persons. } *Chi* follows same rule.

*Examples.*

- |                                |                          |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Qui est-il ?</i>            | who is he ?              |
| <i>Qui cherchez-vous ?</i>     | whom do you seek ?       |
| <i>Qui frappe à la porte ?</i> | who knocks at the door ? |

*Examples.*

- |   |                |
|---|----------------|
| <i>Chi</i> è di là ?                                | Who is there ? |
| <i>Chi</i> non sente la gelosia certamente non ama. |                |
| Who does not feel jealousy certainly does not love. |                |

## SPANISH.

*Que* : same.

*Examples.*

Beltran *que* fué el segundo.

Beltran, who was the second.

Mi madre *que* era de genio menos aspero.

My mother, who was of a temper less severe.

Los libros *que* estan aqui.

The books which are here.

*Quien*, in like manner.

*Examples.*

Los hombres *con quienes*\* hablé.

The men to whom I spoke.

\* Quien has a plural termination, but does not vary in form on account of gender.

*Quien* : same.

*Examples.*

*i Quien* le ha dicho á Vmd. ?

*i Quien* llama ?

who told you ?  
who calls ?

*Que* : same.

*Examples.*

Os *que* meditam outros futuros.

Those who consider other futures.

A actividade *que* o distingue.

The activity which distinguishes him.

*Quem*, in like manner.

*Example.*

O principe *a quem* obedecemos.

The prince whom we obey.

*Remark.*—*Quem*, unlike *quién*, in Spanish has no change in the plural.

*Quem* : same.

*Example.*

*Quem* é ?

*Quem* bate á porta ?

who is it !

who knocks at the door ?

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

107. *Qui*, although invariable in form, carries with it the gender, number, and person of its antecedent ; the verb which follows must, therefore, likewise agree. } *Che* ; same.

*Examples.*

- C'est moi qui l'ai fait.  
It is I who have done it.  
Nous qui sommes satisfaits.  
We who are satisfied.

## ITALIAN

*Examples.*

- Son io che lo dico.  
It is I who say it.  
Noi che siamo soddisfatti  
We who are satisfied.

108. *Que* expresses whom, which, and that, when in the accusative ; or, in other words, when relating to an object which is the direct regimen of the verb. It then } *Che* and *cui* are both used in the accusative, the latter sometimes in preference, in order to avoid any ambiguity. *Che* refers to persons and things, *cui* to persons only.

*Examples.*

- L'homme que vous voyez.  
The man you see (or, whom you see).  
Les chevaux que vous vendez.  
The horses which you sell.  
Les services qu'on a rendus.  
The services which have been rendered.

*Examples.*

- L'avviso che egli confermava.  
The news which he confirmed.  
La compassione che sentivano.  
The pity which they felt.  
L'amico cui\* tanto amava mio padre.  
The friend whom my father loved so much.

*Remark.*—In English the pronoun is frequently not expressed—in French always. And observe that *que* drops the *e* before a vowel or *h* mute and takes an apostrophe. *Qui* never changes.

\* Had *che* been here used it would not have been clearly understood which was loved, the friend or the father.

## SPANISH.

*Que*, same.

*Examples.*

Soy *yo que* lo digo.

It is I who say it.

*Nosotros que somos* satisfechos.

We who are satisfied.

*Que*, or *quien*, are used. *Que* refers to persons and things; *quien* to persons only.

*Examples.*

Las mugeres *que* vimos; or, las mugeres *a quienes* vimos.

The women whom we saw.

La proteccion *que* la Providencia nos habia dispensado.

The protection which Providence had given us.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Que*, same.

*Examples.*

Sou *eu que* o repito.

It is I who repeat it.

*Nos que somos* ricos.

We who are rich.

Same of *que* and *quem*.

*Examples.*

As mulheres *que* vimos; or, *a quem* vimos.

The women whom we saw.

O livro *que* leio.

The book which I read.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

109. *Que* is a relative absolute when no antecedent is expressed, and then refers only to things ; *qui*, as before said, to persons and things.

## ITALIAN.

*Che* follows same rule.

*Examples.*

*Que* cherchez vous là ?

What are you looking for there ?

*Que* voulez-vous que je fasse ?

What do you wish me to do ?

*Examples.*

*Che* vorreste dire ?

What would you wish to say ?

*Che* avete fatto questa mattina ?

What have you done this morning ?

110. *Que* is also used in a sentence expressing admiration, pity, &c.

*Che* is here used in like manner.

*Examples.*

*Qu'il* est bon !

How good he is !

*Qu'elle* est belle !

How beautiful she is !

*Examples.*

*Che* bella casa !

What a beautiful house ?

*Che* bell'uomo !

What a fine man !

111. *Quoi* is both relative and absolute, and has reference only to things.

*Che* or *quale* would be here employed

*Examples.*

Les choses à *quoi*.

The things to which.

De *quoi* vous plaignez-vous ?

Of what do you complain ?

*Examples.*

Le cose alle *quali*.

The things to which.

Di *che* parlate ?

Of what do you speak ?

## SPANISH.

*Que*, same.

*Examples.*

¿*Que* es eso?

What is that?

¿*Que* es lo que ha hecho la señora?

What has the lady done?

*Que* would also be employed here.

*Examples.*

*Que* desgracia!

What a misfortune!

*Que* bella casa!

What a beautiful house!

*Que* and *cual* would be used in Spanish.

*Examples.*

Las cosas á las cuales.

The things to which.

¿A *que* piensa Vmd.?

Of what are you thinking?

## PORTUGUESE.

*Que*, same.

*Examples.*

*Que* faz elle?

What is he doing?

*Que* vos parece?

What do you think?

*Que* in like manner.

*Examples.*

*Que* lastima!

What a pity!

*Que* bello templo!

What a fine temple!

*Que* and *qual* would be used in Portuguese.

*Examples.*

Do *qual* falla Vm.?

Of which do you speak?

As cousas ás *quaes*.

The things to which.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

112. *Quel*, which, whom, is the only relative pronoun which takes the article, forming a compound word, as shown in the preceding table, where it will also be observed that the definite article *le* is joined to the pronoun, and varies according to gender and number. This pronoun as a relative refers to persons and things.

## Examples.

L'homme sur *lequel* je compte.  
The man on whom I count.

Les espérances à *lesquelles* il se livre.

The hopes to which he gives himself up.

J'ai reçu une lettre de mon frère *laquelle* est sur la table.

I have received a letter from my brother, which is on the table.

*Remark.*—*Qui* and *que* frequently take the place of *lequel*, &c., but the latter pronoun should always be used when the antecedent is separated by other words, as in the last example.

113. *Quel*, with and without the article, is sometimes *absolute*, and mostly employed in interrogative sentences, *lequel* marking a distinction between two or more objects.

## ITALIAN.

*Quale* corresponds with the French word *quel* in so far that it takes the article, which, however, is never joined to it. *Quale* differs from the French in having the same termination for both genders; namely, *quale* in the singular, and *quali* in the plural number. It refers to persons and things.

## Examples.

Si volsero al fanciullo il *quale* riferí, &c.  
They turned to the boy who related, &c.

Alla *quale* rivelazione furono presi da spavento.  
At which revelation they were taken with fear.

} Same remark applies to *chi*, *che*, and *cui*.

} *Quale* sing. and *Quali* pl. are used in like manner.

## SPANISH.

*Cual* takes the article as in the Italian equivalent,  
and, like the latter, has the same termination for both  
genders.

*Cual*, singular number; *cuales*, plural.  
It refers both to persons and things.

*Examples.*

Á mi protector, *el cual* me dijo.  
To my protector, who said to me.

Á la cueva de *la cual* ninguno se atrevia á sacar la  
cabeza.

To the cave from which no one dared to withdraw his  
head.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Qual*, same.

*Qual*, singular number; *Quaes*, plural.  
It refers both to persons and things.

*Examples.*

Todos os officiaes, *aos quaes* S.M. concedeu a honra.  
All the officers to whom H.M. conceded the honour.

E cem outras cousas, entre as *quaes*.

And a hundred other things, among which.

} Same of *que* and *quien*.

} Same of *que* and *quem*.

} *Cual* singular, and *cuales* plural, same.

} *Qual*, singular, and *quaes*, plural, same.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Quel* est votre projet ?

What is your project ?

*Quelles* sont vos raisons ?

What are your reasons ?

*Laquelle* de ces deux choses est préférable ?

Which of these two things is preferable ?

*Remark.*—It also expresses admiration, pity, &c., as

*Quel dommage !*      What a pity !

114. *Dont* expresses *whose*, *of whom*, *of which*, and relates in gender and number to persons and things.

*Examples.*

La femme *dont* la beauté est admirable.

The woman whose beauty is wonderful.

L'homme *dont* vous parlez.

The man of whom you are speaking.

Les récompenses *dont* vous êtes digne.

The rewards of which you are worthy.

115. *Ce que* expresses *what* or *that which*.

*Example.*

*Ce que* vous dites est vrai.

What you say is true.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Qual* è quella delle mode ?

What is that among the fashions ?

*Quale* più vi piace fra quelle cose ?

What pleases you most among those things ?

*Cui* expresses *whose*, and is used with or without a preposition, the article being placed first. It has not the varied signification of the French word, *dont*.

*Examples.*

È un uomo il *cui* (or, *il di cui*) coraggio è grande.

He is a man whose courage is great.

La *cui* casa.

Whose house.

*Ciò che* or *quel che* in like manner.

*Example.*

*Ciò* (or *quel*) *che* dite è vero.

What you say is true.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

- i Cuales* son sus motivos de vd. ?  
What are your motives ?  
*i Cual* de los tres quiere vd. ?  
Which of the three will you have ?

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

- Quaés* são seus motivos ? -  
What are his motives ?  
*Qual* dos tres quer Vm. ?  
Which of the three will you have ?

*Cuyo* expresses *whose* and *of which*; it varies in termination according to the gender and number of the object to which it relates, and is used with and without article and preposition.

*Examples.*

Morian casi todos aquellos *cuyos* nombres se apuntaban en él.

Nearly all those died whose names were written in it.

Tres casas *cuyas* rentas manejo.

Three houses, the rents of which he managed.

*Cujo*, same.

*Examples.*

De nossas rendas, *cuja* maior parte é absorvida.  
Of our rents, the greater part of which is absorbed.  
O senhor de *cuja* casa venho.  
The gentleman from whose house I come.

*Lo que* in Spanish.*Example.*

- Lo que* digo es verdad.  
What I say is true.

*O que* in Portuguese.*Example.*

- O que* digo é verdade.  
What I say is true.

## PRONOUNS.

## Indefinite Pronouns.

## FRENCH.

*Quiconque, quelconque.*

Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Autrui.*

Another's, others.

*Personne, nul, aucun.*

No one, nobody.

*Quelqu'un.*

Somebody, some one, some.

*Chacun.*

Each, every one.

*Tel.*

Such.

*Tout.*

All.

*L'un l'autre.*

Each other, one another, both.

## ITALIAN.

*Chiunque, chicchessia, qualunque, qualsisia,  
qualsivoglia, checchessia, checché.*

Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Altrui.*

Another's, others.

*Nessuno.*

No one, nobody.

*Alcuno, qualcuno, qualcheduno.*

Somebody, some one, some.

*Ognuno, ciascuno, ciascheduno.*

Each, every one.

*Tale.*

Such.

*Tutto*

All.

*L'un l'altro.*

Each other, one another, both.

116. *Quiconque* is for both genders, but has no plural, and refers only to persons.

*Example.*

*Quiconque* veut être homme doit savoir redescendre.  
Whoever would be a man must know how to fall again.

*Chiunque :* } same rule.  
*Chicchessia.* } same rule.

*Example.*

*Chiunque* ha detto questo non ha detto la verità.  
Whoever said this has not told the truth.

## Indefinite Pronouns.

## SPANISH.

*Quienquiera, cualquiera.*  
Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Ageno.*

Another's, others.

*Ninguno, nadie.*

No one, nobody, none.

*Alguno, uno, alguien, algo.*

Somebody, some one, some.

*Cada, cada uno, cada cual.*

Each, every one.

*Tal.*

Such.

*Todo.*

All, every.

*Uno—(á, u, y)—otro.*

Each other, one another, both.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Quemquer, qualquer.*  
Whosoever, whatsoever.

*Alheio, outrem.*

Another's, others.

*Ninguem, nenhum, nenhuns* (pl.)

No one, nobody, none.

*Algum* (sing.), *alguns* (pl. masc.), *hum* or  
*um, alguem, algo.*

Somebody, some one, some.

*Cada, cada um, cada qual.*

Each, every one.

*Tal.*

Such.

*Todo, tudo,*

All, every.

*Um e outro.*

Each other, one another, both.

*Quienquiera* : same rule, except that it is sometimes, but very rarely, in the plural, which is *quienesquiera*.

*Example.*

*Quienquiera que sea.*  
Whoever he may be.

*Quemquer* is invariable, and refers only to persons.

*Example.*

*Quemquer que seja.*  
Whoever he may be.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

117. *Quelconque* serves for both genders, takes an *s* in the plural, and refers both to persons and things. It always follows the substantive.

*Examples.*

Un homme *quelconque*.

Whatever man.

Il n'y a projet *quelconque*.

There is no project whatever.

## ITALIAN.

*Qualunque, qualsisia, qualsivoglia*, serve for both genders, and refer both to persons and things. They follow the general rule of adjectives, sometimes preceding, and as frequently following, the noun.

*Examples.*

In *qualunque* stato io mi trovi.

In whatever condition I may be.

Non vedo persona *qualsisia* (Note a).

I see no one whatever.

*Checchessia* and *chechlé* are used without a substantive, and refer only to things.

*Examples.*

Non aver bisogno di *chechessia*.

Not to have need of anything whatever.

118. *Autrui* is mostly used in a vague sense, when we speak of *others* in general, without particularising individuals. It is invariable in gender and number, and nearly always accompanied by a preposition.

*Examples.*

Le bien *d'autrui*.

Another's goods.

Mal juger *d'autrui*.

To judge ill of others.

*Altrui* is employed in the same sense, but may be used with or without a preposition.

*Examples.*

Esser largo dell'*altrui*.

To be free with another's property.

Non fare *altrui* quel che non vuoi per te.

Do not to others what thou wouldst not for thyself.

Note a.—*Alcuno(a)* is here more frequently used : as, Non vedo persona *alcuna*. *Qualsisia, qualsivoglia*, and *chechessia*, are rendered in the plural by *qualsisiano, qualsivogliano*, and *chechessiano*.

## SPANISH.

*Cualquiera* (sing.), *cualesquiera* (pl.), serve for both genders, and refer to persons and things. They generally precede a substantive when expressed before a verb.

*Examples.*

*Cualquiera que guste Vmd.*

Whichever you please.

*Cualesquiera cosas que digan de mi.*

Whatever things they may say of me.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Qualquer* (sing.), *quaesquer* (pl.)  
Same as Spanish.

*Examples.*

*Qualquer que seja o fim.*

Whatever may be the end.

*Quaesquer cousas que digão de mim.*

Whatever things they may say of me.

*Ageno* in the same manner, but has besides a feminine and a plural termination.

*Examples.*

*Lo ageno* ; or, el bien *ageno*.

The property of others.

*Léjos nos hallamos de nuestras tierras, no conocidos de nadie en las agenas.*

We find ourselves far from our own lands, and unknown in others by anybody.

*Alheiro* : same as *ageno*, Spanish.

*Outrem* invariable.

*Examples.*

*Quando interprete de alheias sensações.*

When interpreting the feelings of others.

*O alheio.*

The property of others.

*Não faze a outrem o que não te fizessem a ti.*

Do not to others what thou wouldst not for thyself,

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

119. *Personne* is equivalent to *aucun* or *nul individu*, and, unlike the substantive *personne* (a person), which is feminine, has always a masculine signification, expressing the idea of mankind in general. In a negative sense it is accompanied by the particle *ne*.

*Examples.*

*Personne* n'est parfait.  
No one is perfect.  
Il n'y a *personne*.  
There is no one.

## ITALIAN.

*Nessuno* (masc.), *nessuna* (fem.), takes the negative *non* only when following a verb.

*Examples.*

Ma *non* vide *nessuno*.  
But he saw no one.  
*Nessuno* mi conosce.  
Nobody knows me.

120. When used without the negative, *personne* } means any one.      } Same of *nessuno*.

*Example.*

Y a-t-il *personne*?  
Is there any one?

*Example.*

Vi è *nessuno*?  
Is there any one?

121. *Quelqu'un* has two significations, *absolute* and *relative*. In the former, having reference to no particular substantive, it is always masculine, and adds *s* for the plural number to each word.

*Qualcuno, qualcheduno, alcuno*.—The first two of these pronouns are used only in the singular number, and refer both to persons and things. They change the *o* into *a* for the feminine. *Alcuno* varies in gender and number as an adjective, and relates to persons and things.

## SPANISH.

*Ninguno, Nadie.* The first, like its Italian equivalent, changes the final *o* into *a* for the feminine. *Nadie* is invariable. They take the negative *no* only when following a verb.

*Examples.*

- No conozco á *ninguno*.  
I know nobody.  
*Ninguno* (or *Nadie*) pareció.  
No one appeared.

} The Spanish would use the word *alguno*.

*Example.*

- Allí está *alguno*?  
Is any one there?

*Alguno, uno, alguien, algo.* The first two are both *absolute* and *relative*, agreeing, as the latter, in gender and number with the noun to which it refers, whether of persons or things. *Alguien* is invariable, and refers to persons only. *Algo* is also invariable, and refers to things only. It takes *de* before an adjective, and *que* before an infinitive.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Nenhum, Ninguem.* The first changes thus: *nenhum*, masc., *nenhuma*, fem.; plural, *nenhuns*, masc., *nenhumas*, fem. *Ninguem* is invariable. They take the negative, *não*, only when following a verb, as in Spanish.

*Examples.*

- Não custam lagrimas a *ninguem*.  
They cost tears to nobody.  
*Ninguem* está ahi.  
Nobody is there.

} The Portuguese use the word *alguem*.

*Example.*

- Alguem* está ahi?  
Is any one there?

*Algum, hum* or *um, alguem, algo.* The first two are both *absolute* and *relative*, agreeing, as the latter, in gender and number with the noun to which it refers, whether of persons or things. *Alguem* is invariable, and refers to persons only. *Algo* is also invariable, but seldom used.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Quelqu'un* a-t-il jamais douté sérieusement de l'existence de Dieu ?

Has any one ever doubted seriously the existence of God ?

*Quelques-uns* ont fait, &c.

Some have done, &c.

In a relative sense, when referring to some noun expressed, it agrees with the same in gender and number

*Examples.*

*Quelqu'un* de ces messieurs.

Some one of these gentlemen.

*Quelqu'une* de ces dames.

Some one of these ladies.

*Quelques-uns* de ces messieurs.

Some (or any) of these gentlemen.

*Quelques-unes* de ces choses.

Some (or any) of these things.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Egli guardava se *qualcuno* (or *qualcheduno*) arrivasse.

He looked about to see if anybody arrived.

Sto in aspetto di *qualcuno* (or *qualcheduno*).

I am expecting somebody.

*Qualcuna* di queste signore.

Some one of these ladies.

Ho visto *alcuni* dei vostri amici.

I have seen some of your friends.

*Alcune* di queste signorine mi hanno detto.

Some of these young ladies have told me.

Prendete *alcune* di queste mandorle.

Take some of these almonds.

*Note.*—As *absolute* it refers to persons only; as *relative*, both to persons and things.

122. *Chacun* is both *absolute* and *relative*; from its nature, it is used only in the singular number.

*Ognuno, Ciascuno, Ciascheduno.*

Same rule.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

- i* Que puede decir *uno*?  
 What can one say?  
*Algunos* (or *unos*) lo saben.  
 Some know it.  
*i* Tiene Vd. *algo de bueno*?  
 Have you anything good?  
*i* Tiene Vd. *algo que decir*?  
 Have you anything to say?

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

- Querem-se bem *uns* aos outros.  
 They love one another well.  
 Eu tenho *alguma* cousa que fazer.  
 I have something to do.  
 Fazer o que *alguem* manda.  
 To do what one orders.  
 Ter que fazer com *alguem*.  
 To have to do with somebody.

*Remark.*—Alguno, relating to a noun masculine, frequently suppresses the last vowel, and can be written *algun*.

*Cada, Cada uno, Cada cual.*  
 Same rule.

*Cada, cada um, cada qual.*  
 Same rule.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Chacun* a son défaut.  
Every one has his fault.  
*Chacun* de ces hommes.  
Each of these men.  
*Chacune* de ces femmes.  
Each of these women.

123. *Tel* is both *absolute* and *relative*: as the latter, it varies in gender and number, like an adjective.

*Examples.*

*Tel* qui rit vendredi, dimanche pleurera.  
He who laughs on Friday will cry on Sunday.  
*Tel* homme, *telles* choses.  
Such a man, such things.

124. *Tout* is properly speaking an adjective, sometimes also an adverb; it is, however, frequently employed as a pronoun, and is then invariable in its termination (Note a.)

*Examples.*

*Tout* me plaît      Everything pleases me.  
Je sais *tout*      I know all.

Note a.—To express *all* when conveying an idea of plurality, a noun must be added: as, *Tout le monde le sait*—All know it.  
Note b.—*Cotale*, sing.—*cotali*, pl., (such) are seldom now used.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Ognuno* la loda.  
Every one praises her.  
Il generale comandò che *ciascuno* (or *ciascheduno*) se n'andasse via.  
The general ordered that every one should go away.

*Tale*, or *Tal*, masc. and fem. sing., *Tali*, masc. and fem. plural, are both *absolute* and *relative* (Note b.)

*Examples.*

*Tal* ride oggi il quale domani piangerà.  
He laughs to-day who will cry to-morrow.  
*Tale* uomo, *tali* cose.  
Such a man, such things.

} *Tutto* is also used as an adjective and an adverb, but, unlike the French equivalent, has a plural form; in the examples it is an indefinite pronoun.

*Examples.*

*Tutto* mi piace.      Everything pleases me.  
*Tutti* parlano così.      All speak thus.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Que se contente *cada uno* (or *cada cual*) con su poco ó su mucho.

Let every one be content with his small portion or his abundance.

*Cada hombre, cada muger.*

Each man, each woman.

*Tal*, masc. and fem. singular ; *Tales*, masc. and fem. plural, are *absolute* and *relative*. (Note a.)

*Examples.*

*Tal amo, tal criado.*

Like master, like man.

Encontró vigorosos sostenedores, *tales* como los Sres. B. & C.

He met vigorous supporters, such as Messrs B. & C.

} *Todo*, same rule as Italian.

*Examples.*

Es *todo* de oro.

*Todos* le perdonan.

It is all of gold.

All pardon him.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Este, *cada vez*, se aproximava mais.

This, each time, approached nearer.

*Cada homem, cada mulher.*

Each man, each woman.

*Cada qual* no seu officio.

Every one to his trade.

*Tal*, masc. and fem. singular ; *Taes*, masc. and fem. plural, are *absolute* and *relative* (Note a.)

*Examples.*

Essa é harmonia, *tal* como hoje a entendemos.

This is harmony, such as we to-day understand it.

*Tal homem, taes cousas.*

Such a man, such things.

} *Todo* is also used as an adjective and an adverb ; *tudo* in an indeterminate sense, and expressing totality.

*Examples.*

*Todos* havemos de morrer. We must all die.

Em *tudo* que diz. In all that he says.

Em *tudo* ou em parte. Altogether, or in part.

Note a.—*Fulano* also means *such a one*, in an absolute sense ; but is now seldom used.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

125. *L'un l'autre.* This pronoun, as it is generally called, varies in form, according to the gender and number of the object to which it relates, in the following manner :

## SINGULAR.

*L'un l'autre*, masculine  
*L'une l'autre*, feminine.

## PLURAL.

*Les uns les autres*, masculine.  
*Les uncs les autres*, feminine.

When only two objects are referred to, *l'un l'autre* should be in the singular number, being rendered in English by "each other." Several persons or things being signified, the plural form must be employed. (Exceptions to this rule are sometimes found among the best French writings.)

*Examples.*

Cas deux hommes se détestent *l'un l'autre*.

These two men detest each other.

Toutes ces femmes s'aiment *les unes les autres*.

All these women love one another.

126. *L'un et l'autre* means *both*, and must not be confounded with *l'un l'autre*.

*Example.*

*L'un et l'autre* sont à plaindre.  
Both are to be pitied.

## ITALIAN.

*L'un l'altro.* Same, as follows :  
}

## SINGULAR.

*L'un l'altro*, masculine.  
*L'una l'altra*, feminine.

## PLURAL.

*Gli uni gli altri*, masculine.  
*Le une le altre*, feminine.

} Same of *l'un l'altro*.

*Examples.*

Questi due uomini si detestano *l'un l'altro*.

These two men detest each other.

Queste donne si amano *le une le altre*.

These women love one another.

*L'uno e l'altro.* Same.

*Example*

*L'uno e l'altro* merita ricompensa.  
Both merit a reward.

## SPANISH.

*Uno*—(á, u, y)—*otro*. The Spanish have no expression corresponding exactly to the *l'un l'autre* of the French and the *l'un l'altro* of the Italian. In order to give the same meaning, they must connect *uno* and *otro* by a conjunction or preposition, according to the sense, thus forming a pronoun which relates both to persons and things, and varies in form to agree with its object in gender and number.

## PORTUGUESE.

Same of *um* and *outro*.

*Examples.*

Esos dos hombres se aman *uno á otro*.  
Those two men love one another.

Cuando nos estabamos despidiendo *los unos y los otros*.  
When we were taking leave of one another.

} *Uno y otro* can be employed to express the word *both*.

*Example.*

Que *uno y otro* téman.  
Let both fear.

*Examples.*

Esses dois homens amão-se *um á outro*.  
These two men love one another.  
*N'umas e n'outras* recebia mais agrados do que dinheiro.  
Among them he received more pleasure than money.

} Same of *um e outro*.

*Example.*

*Um e outro* vêm.  
Both are coming.

## FRENCH.

*Remark.*—A verb following this pronoun should be in the plural number, as seen in the last example.

127. When a preposition precedes *l'un*, the same  
should be repeated before *l'autre*. } Same.

*Example.*

Il parle de *l'un* et de *l'autre*.  
He speaks of both.

*Remark.*—*Both* is also rendered in French by *tous deux*, *tous les deux*, and *deux à la fois*.

128. *Both*, as used in English before two nouns, adjectives, or pronouns, is omitted in French, and rendered as follows :

*Examples.*

Et le riche et le pauvre vont également des douleurs à la mort.

Both the rich and poor pass equally from afflictions unto death.

Il est renommé tant par son esprit que par ses richesses.  
He is renowned both by his talents and by his riches.

## ITALIAN.

*Remark.*—Unlike the French rule, a verb following the pronoun is placed in the *singular* number. (*Note a.*)

*Example.*

Io parlo dell' uno e dell' altro.  
I speak of both.

In Italian, by *Tutti e due*, *ambidue*, masc., *ambedue*, fem.; *entrambi*, masc., *entrambe*, fem.; *ambo*, masc. and fem.

} Same.

*Examples.*

E per mare e per terra.  
Both by sea and land.

È famoso tanto per la saviezza del padre che per la propria.  
He is famous both on account of his father's wisdom and his own.

*Note a.*—It is obvious that with the Italians this mode of using the verb is elliptical. In the example, *merita* is understood after *l'uno*.

# PRONOUNS.

145

## SPANISH.

*Remark.*—A verb following this pronoun is placed in } Same.  
the plural number, as in French.

} Same.

### *Example.*

Conozco al uno y al otro.  
I know both.

In Spanish, by *Los dos* (masc.), *las dos* (fem.); *ambos* (masc.), *ambas* (fem.); *entrados* (masc.), *entradas* (fem.)

} Same.

### *Examples.*

Ella es hermosa é inteligente.  
She is both beautiful and intelligent.  
Tanto por mar como por tierra.  
Both by sea and land.

} Same.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*  
*D'uma e d'outra parte.*  
On both sides.

In Portuguese, by *Ambos* (masc.), *ambas* (fem.); *os dois* (masc.), *as duas* (fem.)

} Same.

### *Examples.*

Ella é formosa e inteligente.  
She is both handsome and intelligent.  
Tanto por mar como por terra.  
Both by sea and land.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

129. *On*,—*one, they, people, we.* This pronoun has no corresponding equivalent in other languages—that is, none which has so varied an employment. Although it is essentially of the singular number, *on* more frequently conveys an idea of plurality; but the verb which accompanies it must *always* be put in the third person singular.

*Examples.*

*On* avait calomnié cet homme.

They had slandered that man.

Comme il parlait ainsi, *on* entendit un bruit.

While he was thus speaking, a noise was heard.

*On* s'étonna d'abord, *on* finit par s'indigner.

People were at first astonished, and finished by being indignant.

130. Although the verb remains in the singular number, *on* admits of either a singular or plural substantive after the verb.

*Examples.*

*On* n'est pas un voleur.

One is not a robber.

*On* n'est pas des voleurs.

We are not robbers.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, to express vaguely, *they, people, &c.*, the pronoun *si* is used, accompanied by an active verb in the third person singular.

*Example.*

*Si* prevede, (or) *si* dice che la Francia *si* armerà alle frontiere.

They foresee, (or) people say that France will arm at the frontiers.

If there be an accusative (in English), it may become a nominative in Italian, the verb then agreeing with it in number.

*Examples.*

*Si* vede una persona.

They see a person; or, a person is seen.

*Si vedono* molte persone.

They see many persons; or, many persons are seen.

# PRONOUNS.

147

## SPANISH.

Same with the pronoun *se*.

### Example.

*Se cree*, (or) *se dice* que es hombre de juicio.  
They *think*, (or) people say that he is a man of sense.

Same.

### Examples.

*Se ha recibido* el libro.  
They have received the book ; or, the book has been received.  
*Se han recibido* los libros.  
They have received the books ; or, the books have been received.

## PORTUGUESE.

Same with the pronoun *se*.

### Examples.

*Falla-se* em guerra.  
They speak of war.  
*Que se diz na côrte ?*  
What do they say at court ?

Same.

### Examples.

*No centro vê-se* uma bandeja de prata.  
In the centre a silver tray is seen.  
*No centro vêm-se* tres bandejas de prata.  
In the centre three silver trays are seen.

## PRONOUNS.

## FRENCH.

131. *On* follows the verb *only* when used in a parenthesis, or interrogatively, and is then connected by a hyphen.

*Examples.*

Elle était, *dit-on*, la fille d'un Italien.

She was, they say, the daughter of an Italian.

Ne *dit-on* pas?

Do they not say?

132. When a verb which precedes *on* ends in a vowel, the letter *t* should be placed between them.

*Example.*

Ne pense-t-on pas?

Do they not think?

*Note.*—When *on* is preceded by any word which is not a verb, it takes *l'*, except at the beginning of a sentence: as,

Sa maison, d'où *l'on* voyait la mer.

His house, from which they viewed the sea.

This rule is better avoided when a word which follows *on* begins with *l*. We should say, Si *on le* pense, and not Si *l'on le* pense.

## ITALIAN.

*They, people, &c.,* can also be understood, not expressed, a verb in the active voice being employed in the third person plural.

*Example.*

*Prevedono, (or) dicono* che la Francia si armerà alle frontiere.

They foresee, (or) people say that France will arm at the frontiers.

## PRONOUNS.

149

### SPANISH.

} Same.

### *Example.*

*Dicen que es hombre de juicio.  
They say that he is a man of sense.*

### PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

### *Example.*

*Dizem que está ferido mortalmente.  
They say that he is mortally wounded.*

*General Remarks.*—The equivalents of the auxiliary verbs “To have,” and “To be,” are fully conjugated both in their simple and compound tenses. As these verbs are in constant use, and assist in the formation of all others, the learner is recommended to commit to memory the auxiliaries in the language or languages under study.

For the purpose of showing the agreement of the verb with the personal pronoun, the latter is expressed in the present tense indicative mood of the verb “To have;” but, as before remarked, the personal pronoun in the nominative case is usually suppressed in the Italian, Spanish, and Portuguese languages. In French, it is always expressed, except in the second person singular, and the first and second persons plural of the imperative mood.

*Regular Verbs* are all conjugated in the same manner as the models which come after the verb “To be:”

### Verb To Have.

#### S I M P L E T E N S E S.

#### Infinitive Mood.

Present.	
To have.	Avoir.
Participle Present.	Participle Present.
Having.	Ayant.
Participle Past.	Participle Past.
Had.	Eu.

#### FRENCH.

Present.  
Avoir.

Participle Present.  
Ayant.  
Participle Past.  
Eu.

#### ITALIAN.

Present.  
Avere.  
Participle Present.  
Avendo.  
Participle Past.  
Avuto.

#### Indicative Mood.

Present.	
I have.	J'ai.
Thou hast.	Tu as.
He, or she, has.	Il a.
We have.	Nous avons.
You have.	Vous avez.
They have.	Ils ont.

#### Present.

J'ai.  
Tu as.  
Il a.  
Nous avons.  
Vous avez.  
Ils ont.

#### Present.

Io ho.  
Tu hai.  
Egli ha.  
Noi abbiamo.  
Voi avete.  
Eglino hanno.

these show how the termination at the top of each column should be changed in order to give the right inflection. It is needless to add the compound tenses, which are simply formed by the auxiliary and past participle.

*Irregular Verbs.*—Remarks on these are made in the Preface, to which the student is referred: it must, however, be repeated that the verbs are arranged alphabetically as regards the English word; this plan will be found convenient, frequent reference being required. As there is more irregularity in the moods and tenses of French verbs than in those of the other languages, the former are fully conjugated; the latter show only those tenses which are irregular.

**Verb To Have.**  
**S I M P L E   T E N S E S .**  
**Infinitive Mood.**

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
	Present.		Present.
Haber	Participle Present.	tener.	Haver
Habiendo	Participle Past.	teniendo.	Havendo
Habido		tenido.	Havido

**Indicative Mood.**

	Present.		Present.
Yo he	tengo.	Eu hei	tenho.
Tu has	tienes.	Tu has	tens.
Él ha	tiene.	Elle ha	tem.
Nosotros hemos	tenemos.	Nós havemos, or hemos	temos.
Vosotro habéis	tenéis.	Vós haveis, or heis	tendes.
Ellos han	tiénen.	Elles hão	têm or têem.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
<b>Imperfect.</b>	<b>Imperfect.</b>	<b>Imperfect.</b>
I had.	J'avais.	Aveva, or avevo.
Thou hadst.	Tu avais.	Avevi.
He had.	Il avait.	Aveva.
We had.	Nous avions.	Avevamo.
You had.	Vous aviez.	Avevate.
They had.	Ils avaient.	Avévanlo.
<b>Preterite Definite.</b>	<b>Preterite Definite.</b>	<b>Preterite Definite.</b>
I had.	J'eus.	Ebbi.
Thou hadst.	Tu eus.	Avesti.
He had.	Il eut.	Ebbe.
We had.	Nous eûmes.	Avemmo.
You had.	Vous eûtes.	Aveste.
They had.	Ils eurent.	Ebbero.
<b>Future.</b>	<b>Future.</b>	<b>Future.</b>
I shall, or will, have.	J'aurai.	Avrà.
Thou shalt have.	Tu auras.	Avrai.
He shall have.	Il aura.	Avrà.
We shall have.	Nous aurons.	Avremo.
You shall have.	Vous aurez.	Avrete.
They shall have.	Ils auront.	Avranno.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
Imperfect.		Imperfect.	
Había	tenia.	Havia	tinha.
Habías	tenias.	Havias	tinhas.
Había	tenia.	Havia	tinha.
Habíamos	teníamos.	Havíamos	tinhamos.
Habíais	teníais.	Havieis	tinheis.
Habían	tenían.	Havião	tinhão.
Preterite Definite.		Preterite Definite.	
Hube	tuve.	Houve	tive.
Hubiste	tuviste.	Houveste	tiveste.
Hubo	tuvo.	Houve	teve.
Hubimos	tuvímos.	Houvemos	tivemos.
Hubisteis	tuvísteis.	Houvestes	tivestes.
Hubiéron	tuvieron.	Houverão	tiverão.
Future.		Future.	
Habré	tendré.	Haverei	terei.
Habras	tendras.	Haveras	teras.
Habrá	tendrá.	Haverá	terá.
Habrémos	tendremos.	Haveremos	teremos.
Habréis	tendreis.	Havereis	tereis.
Habran	tendran.	Haverão	terão.

## VERBS.

## Conditional Mood.

I should, or would, have  
 Thou wouldest have.  
 He would have.  
 We would have.  
 You would have.  
 They would have.

FRENCH.  
 J'aurais.  
 Tu aurais.  
 Il aurait.  
 Nous aurions.  
 Vous auriez.  
 Ils auraient.

ITALIAN.  
 Avrei.  
 Avresti.  
 Avrebbe.  
 Avremmo.  
 Avreste.  
 Avrebbero.

## Imperative Mood.

Have (thou.)  
 Let him have.  
 Let us have.  
 Have (ye.)  
 Let them have.

Aie.  
 Qu'il ait.  
 Ayons.  
 Ayez.  
 Qu'ils aient.

Abbi.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbiamo.  
 Abbiate.  
 Abbiano.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.  
 That I may have.  
 That thou mayst have.  
 That he may have.  
 That we may have.  
 That you may have.  
 That they may have.

Present.  
 Que j'aié.  
 Que tu aies.  
 Qu'il ait.  
 Que nous ayons.  
 Que vous ayez.  
 Qu'ils aient.

Present.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbia.  
 Abbiamo.  
 Abbiate.  
 Abbiano.

## Conditional Mood.

SPANISH.		PORtUGUESE.	
Habría	tendria.	Haveria	teria.
Habrias	tendrias.	Haverias	terias.
Habria	tendria.	Haveria	teria.
Habríamos	tendríamos.	Haveriamos	teriamos.
Habráis	tendréais.	Haverieis	terieis.
Habráan	tendrían.	Haverião	terião.

## Imperative Mood.

Ten.	Ha (not now used)	tem (tu)
Ténga.	Haja	tenha.
Tengámos.	Hajamos	tenhamos.
Tenéd.	Havei	tende.
Tégan.	Hajão	tenhão.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future
Háya	si hubiére.	Tenga	si tuviére.	Haja	se houver.	Tenha	se tiver.
Háyas	si hubieres.	Tengas	si tuvieres.	Hajas	se houveres	Tenhas	se tiveres.
Háya	si hubiere.	Tenga	si tuviére.	Haja	se houver	Tenha	se tiver.
Hayámos	si hubiéremos.	Tengámos	si tuviéremos.	Hajámos	se houvermos.	Tenhámos	se tivermos.
Hayáis	si hubiéreis.	Tengais	si tuviéreis.	Hajais	se houverdes.	Tenhais	se tiverdes.
Háyan	si hubiéren.	Tengan	si tuvierem.	Hajão	se houverem.	Tenhão	se tiverem.

## VERBS.

Subjunctive Mood—*continued.*

IMPERFECT.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
Imperfect.	Imperfect.	Imperfect.
That I might have.	Que j'eusse.	Avessi.
That thou mightst have.	Que tu eusses.	Avessi.
That he might have.	Qu'il eût.	Avesse.
That we might have.	Que nous eussions.	Avessimo.
That you might have.	Que vous eussiez.	Aveste.
That they might have.	Qu'ils eussent.	Avessero.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

PAST PARTICIPLE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
To have had.	Avoir eu.	Avere avuto.
Having had.	Ayant eu.	Avendo avuto.

## Indicative Mood.

PREFERITE INDEFINITE.	PREFERITE INDEFINITE.	PREFERITE INDEFINITE.
I have had.	J'ai eu.	Ho avuto.
Thou hast had.	Tu as eu.	Hai avuto.
He has had.	Il a eu.	Ha avuto.
We have had.	Nous avons eu.	Abbiamo avuto.
You have had.	Vous avez eu.	Avete avuto.
They have had.	Ils ont eu.	Hanno avuto.

Subjunctive Mood—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

Present. in <i>ra.</i>	Future. in <i>se.</i>	Present. in <i>ra.</i>	Future. in <i>se.</i>
Hubiéra	hubiése.	Tuviéra	tuviése.
Hubieras	hubieses.	Tuvieras	tuvieses.
Hubiera	hubiese.	Tuviera	tuviese.
Hubiéramos	hubiésemos.	Tuviéramos	tuviésemos.
Hubierais	hubieseis.	Tuvierais	tuvíeseis.
Hubieran	hubiesen.	Tuviérán	tuviesen.

## PORTUGUESE.

Present. in <i>ra.</i>	Future. in <i>se.</i>	Present. in <i>ra.</i>	Future. in <i>se.</i>
Houvéra	houvesse.	Tivéra	tivesse.
Houvérás	houvesses.	Tivéras	tivesses.
Houvéra	houvesse.	Tivéra	tivesse.
Houvéramos	houvessemos.	Tivéramos	tivessemos.
Houvéreis	houvesseis.	Tivéreis	tivesseis.
Houvérão	houvessem.	Tivérão	tivessem.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

## Past Participle.

Haber tenido.  
Habiendo tenido.

## Past Participle.

Ter tido.  
Tendo tido.

## Indicative Mood.

## Preterite Indefinite.

He tenido.  
Has tenido.  
Ha tenido.  
Hemos tenido.  
Habeis tenido.  
Han tenido.

## Preterite Indefinite.

Tenho tido, or havido.  
Tens tido      "      "  
Tem tido      "      "  
Temos tido    "      "  
Tendes tido   "      "  
Têm tido      "      "

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

## FRENCH.

## ITALIAN.

## Pluperfect.

I had had.  
Thou hadst had.  
He had had.  
We had had.  
You had had.  
They had had.

## Pluperfect.

J'avais eu.  
Tu avais eu.  
Il avait eu.  
Nous avions eu.  
Vous aviez eu.  
Ils avaient eu.

## Pluperfect.

Aveva avuto.  
Avevi avuto.  
Aveva avuto.  
Avevamo avuto.  
Avevate avuto.  
Avevano avuto.

## Preterite Anterior.

I had had.  
Thou hadst had.  
He had had.  
We had had.  
You had had.  
They had had.

## Preterite Anterior.

J'eus eu.  
Tu eus eu.  
Il eut eu.  
Nous eûmes eu.  
Vous eûtes eu.  
Ils eurent eu.

## Preterite Anterior.

Ebbi avuto.  
Avesti avuto.  
Ebbe avuto.  
Avemmo avuto.  
Aveste avuto.  
Ebbero avuto.

## Future Anterior.

I shall have had.  
Thou shalt have had.  
He shall have had.  
We shall have had.  
You shall have had.  
They shall have had.

## Future Anterior.

J'aurai eu.  
Tu auras eu.  
Il aura eu.  
Nous aurons eu.  
Vous aurez eu.  
Ils auront eu.

## Future Anterior.

Avrò avuto.  
Avrai avuto.  
Avrà avuto.  
Avremo avuto.  
Avrete avuto.  
Avranno avuto.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

Pluperfect.  
 Habia tenido.  
 Habias tenido.  
 Habia tenido.  
 Habiamos tenido.  
 Habiais tenido.  
 Habian tenido.

Pluperfect.  
 Tinha tido, or havido.  
 Tinhas tido     "     "  
 Tinha tido     "     "  
 Tinhamos tido     "     "  
 Tinheis tido     "     "  
 Tinhão tido     "     "

Preterite Anterior.  
 Hube tenido.  
 Hubiste tenido.  
 Hubo tenido.  
 Hubimos tenido.  
 Hubisteis tenido.  
 Hubieron tenido.

Preterite Anterior.  
 Tive tido     "     "  
 Tiveste tido     "     "  
 Teve tido     "     "  
 Tivemos tido     "     "  
 Tivestes tido     "     "  
 Tiverão tido     "     "

Future Anterior.  
 Habré tenido.  
 Habras tenido.  
 Habrá tenido.  
 Habremos tenido.  
 Habreis tenido.  
 Habran tenido.

Future Anterior.  
 Terei tido     "     "  
 Teras tido     "     "  
 Terá tido     "     "  
 Teremos tido     "     "  
 Tereis tido     "     "  
 Terão tido     "     "

## Conditional Mood.

I should have had.  
 Thou shouldst have had.  
 He should have had.  
 We should have had.  
 You should have had.  
 They should have had.

FRENCH.  
 J'aurais eu.  
 Tu aurais eu.  
 Il aurait eu.  
 Nous aurions eu.  
 Vous auriez eu.  
 Ils auraient eu.

ITALIAN.  
 Avrei avuto.  
 Avresti avuto.  
 Avrebbe avuto.  
 Avremmo avuto.  
 Avreste avuto.  
 Avrebbero avuto.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Preterite.  
 That I may have had.  
 That thou mayst have had.  
 That he may have had.  
 That we may have had.  
 That you may have had.  
 That they may have had.

Preterite.  
 Que j'aie eu.  
 Que tu aies eu.  
 Qu'il ait eu.  
 Que nous ayons eu.  
 Que vous ayez eu.  
 Qu'ils aient eu.

Preterite.  
 Abbia avuto.  
 Abbia avuto.  
 Abbia avuto.  
 Abbiamo avuto.  
 Abbiate avuto.  
 Abbiano avuto.

Pluperfect.  
 That I might have had.  
 That thou mightst have had.  
 That he might have had.  
 That we might have had.  
 That you might have had.  
 That they might have had.

Pluperfect.  
 Que j'eusse eu.  
 Que tu eusses eu.  
 Qu'il eût eu.  
 Que nous eussions eu.  
 Que vous eussiez eu.  
 Qu'ils eussent eu.

Pluperfect.  
 Avessi avuto.  
 Avessi avuto.  
 Avesse avuto.  
 Avessimo avuto.  
 Aveste avuto.  
 Avessero avuto.

## Conditional Mood.

## SPANISH.

Habria tenido.  
Habrias tenido.  
Habria tenido.  
Habriamos tenido.  
Habriaís tenido.  
Habrian tenido.

## PORTUGUESE.

Teria tido or havido.  
Terias tido      "      "  
Teria tido      "      "  
Teríamos tido    "      "  
Terieis tido      "      "  
Terião tido      "      "

## Subjunctive Mood.

## Present.

Haya tenido  
Hayas tenido  
Haya tenido  
Hayamos tenido  
Hayais tenido  
Hayan tenido

## Future.

si hubiere tenido.  
si hubieres tenido.  
si hubiere tenido.  
si hubieremos tenido.  
si hubiereis tenido.  
si hubieren tenido.

## Present.

Tenha tido, or havido.  
Tenhas tido      "  
Tenha tido      "  
Tenhâmos tido    "  
Tenhais tido      "  
Tenhão tido      "

## Future.

se tiver tido, or havido.  
se tiveres tido      "  
se tiver tido      "  
se tivermos tido    "  
se tiverdes tido    "  
se tiverem tido    "

## Pluperfect.

Hubiera, or hubiese tenido.  
Hubieras, or hubieses tenido.  
Hubiera, or hubiese tenido.  
Hubieramos, or hubiesemos tenido.  
Hubieraís, or hubieseis tenido.  
Hubieran, or hubiesen tenido.

## Pluperfect.

Tivéra, or tivesse  
Tivéras, or tivesses  
Tivéra, or tivesse  
Tivéramos, or tivessemos  
Tivéreis, or tivesseis  
Tivérão, or tivessem

} tido, or havido.

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Have."

## FRENCH.

133. *Avoir*—to have.

The past participle *eu*, in the masculine, adds *e* to form the feminine, according to rules on past participles hereafter given.

134. This verb, besides assisting in the conjugation of others, serves also as auxiliary to itself in all compound tenses.

135. *Avoir* is used in the third person singular as an impersonal verb. Example :

Il y a des hommes

there are men.

## ITALIAN.

*Avere*—to have.

Avuto (masc.), avuta (fem.)  
See rules on past participles.

Same.

In Italian the verb *to be* is generally used ; as, C'è, or vi è (there is, or there are) ; but frequently also the verb *avere*: as,

Quante miglia ci ha ?

how many miles is it ?

136. It is also employed where the verb *to be* is used in English in sentences expressing physical or moral conditions, such as cold, hunger, fear, &c. : as,

J'ai froid

I am cold.

Ho fame

I am hungry.

J'ai peur

I am afraid.

Ho paura

I am afraid.

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Have."

## SPANISH.

*Haber* and *Tener*.—In Spanish, as in Portuguese, there are two verbs which signify "To have." The first, *haber*, is employed in the capacity of an auxiliary in forming the compound tenses of other verbs; as, *he hablado*, I have spoken. It serves also as an impersonal verb: ex., *hay* (*not ha*) un hombre, there is a man; *habia otros*, there were others.

*Tener* denotes possession; as, *tengo una casa*, I have a house; *tenemos libros*, we have books.

It is occasionally used as an auxiliary; as, *tengo hablado*, I have spoken. When before an infinitive, it should be followed by the word *que*; as, *tengo que decir*, I have to say.

} Same: as,

*Tengo hambre*  
*Tengo miedo*

I am hungry.  
I am afraid.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Haver* and *Ter*.—Both these verbs signify *to have*.

*Haver* often accompanies another verb to express a future action; as, *ha de vir hoje*, he has to, or will come to-day. It is also used as an impersonal verb; ex., *ha muitas casas*, there are many houses.

*Ter* (like *tener* in Spanish) denotes possession; but, unlike the latter, it is the verb most frequently used as an auxiliary in forming the compound tenses of other verbs as well as its own: ex., *tenho dormido*, I have slept. When before an infinitive it should be followed by *que*; as, *tenho que fazer*, I must do.

} Same: as,

*Tenho frio*  
*Tenho medo*

I am cold.  
I am afraid.

## VERBS.

## Verb To Be.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

Present.  
To be.  
Participle Present.  
Being.  
Participle Past.  
Been.

FRENCH.  
Present.  
Être.  
Participle Present.  
Étant.  
Participle Past.  
Été.

ITALIAN.  
Present.  
Essere.  
Participle Present.  
Essendo.  
Participle Past.  
Stato.

## Indicative Mood.

Present.  
I am.  
Thou art.  
He is.  
We are.  
You are.  
They are.  
Imperfect.  
I was.  
Thou wast.  
He was.  
We were.  
You were.  
They were.

Present.  
Je suis.  
Tu es.  
Il est.  
Nous sommes.  
Vous êtes.  
Ils sont.  
Imperfect.  
J'étais.  
Tu étais.  
Il était.  
Nous étions.  
Vous étiez.  
Ils étaient.

Present.  
Sono.  
Sei.  
È.  
Siamo.  
Siete.  
Sono.  
Imperfect.  
Era.  
Eri.  
Era.  
Eravamo.  
Eravate.  
Erano.

## Verb To Be.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

## SPANISH.

Present.

Ser	estar.
Siendo	Participle Present.
estando.	
Sido	Participle Past.
	estado.

## PORTUGUESE.

Present.

Ser	estar.
Sendo	Participle Present.
	estando.

Sido	Participle Past.
	estado.

## Indicative Mood.

Present.

Soy	estoy.
Eres	estas.
Es	está.
Somos	estamos.
Sois	estais.
Son	estan.

Imperfect.

Era	estaba.
Eras	estabas.
Era	estaba.
Eramos	estabamos.
Erais	estabais.
Eran	estaban.

Present.

Sou	estou.
Es	estás.
É, or he	está.
Somos	estamos.
Sois	estais.
São	estão.

Imperfect.

Era	estava.
Eras	estavas.
Era	estava.
Eramos	estavamos.
Ereis	estaveis.
Erão	estavão.

## VERBS.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
Preterite Definite.	Preterite Definite.	Preterite Definite.
I was.	Je fus.	Fui.
Thou wast.	Tu fus.	Fosti.
He was.	Il fut.	Fu.
We were.	Nous fûmes.	Fummo
You were.	Vous fûtes.	Foste.
They were.	Ils furent.	Furono.
Future.	Future.	Future.
I shall be.	Je serai.	Sarò.
Thou shalt be.	Tu seras.	Sarai.
He shall be.	Il sera.	Sarà.
We shall be.	Nous serons.	Saremo.
You shall be.	Vous serez.	Sarete.
They shall be.	Ils seront.	Saranno.

## Conditional Mood.

Present.	Present.	Present.
I should be.	Je serais.	Sarei.
Thou shouldst be.	Tu serais.	Saresti.
He should be.	Il serait.	Sarebbe.
We should be.	Nous serions.	Saremmo.
You should be.	Vous seriez.	Sareste.
They should be.	Ils seraient.	Sarebbero.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
Preterite Definite.		Preterite Definite.	
Fui	estuve.	Fui	estive.
Fuiste	estuviste.	Foste	estiveste.
Fué	estuvo.	Foi	esteve.
Fuimos	estuvimos.	Fomos	estivémos.
Fuisteis	estuvisteis.	Fostes	estivéstes.
Fueron	estuvieron.	Forão	estiverão.
Future.		Future.	
Seré	estaré.	Serei	estarei.
Seras	estarás.	Serás	estarás.
Será	estará.	Será	estará.
Saremos	estaremos.	Saremos	estarémos.
Sereis	estareis.	Sereis	estareis.
Seran	estaran.	Serão	estarão.

## Conditional Mood.

Present.		Present.	
Seria	estaria.	Seria	estaria.
Serias	estarias.	Serias	estarias.
Seria	estaria.	Seria	estaria.
Seríamos	estariamos.	Seríamos	estariamos.
Seríais	estariais.	Serieis	estarieis.
Serían	estarian.	Serião	estarião.

## Imperative Mood.

Be (thou).  
Let him be.  
Let us be.  
Be (you).  
Let them be.

FRENCH.  
Sois.  
Qu'il soit.  
Soyons.  
Soyez.  
Qu'ils soient.

ITALIAN.  
Sii.  
Sia.  
Siamo.  
Siate.  
Siano,

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.  
That I may be.  
That thou mayst be.  
That he may be.  
That we may be.  
That you may be.  
That they may be.

Present.  
Que je sois.  
Que tu sois.  
Qu'il soit.  
Que nous soyons.  
Que vous soyiez.  
Qu'ils soient.

Present.  
Sia.  
Sia.  
Sia.  
Siamo.  
Siate.  
Siano, or sieno

Imperfect.  
That I might be.  
That thou mightst be.  
That he might be.  
That we might be.  
That you might be.  
That they might be.

Imperfect.  
Que je fusse.  
Que tu fusses.  
Qu'il fût.  
Que nous fussions.  
Que vous fussiez.  
Qu'ils fussent.

Imperfect.  
Fossi.  
Fossi.  
Fosse.  
Fossimo.  
Foste.  
Fossero.

## Imperative Mood.

## SPANISH.

Se	está.
Sea	esté.
Seamos	estemos.
Sed	estad.
Sean	esten.

## PORTUGUESE.

Sê	estâ.
Seja	esteja.
Sejamos	estejamos.
Sede	estai.
Sejão	estejão.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.
Sea	si fuere.	Esté	si estuviere.	Seja	se for.	Esteja	se estiver.
Seas	si fueres.	Estes	si estuvieres.	Sejas	se fores.	Estejas	se estiveres.
Sea	si fuere.	Esté	si estuviere.	Seja	se for.	Esteja	se estiver.
Seamos	si fuéremos.	Estemos	si estuvieremos.	Sejâmos	se formos.	Estejâmos	se estivermos.
Seais	si fuereis.	Esteis	si estuviereis.	Sejais	se fordes.	Estejais	se estiverdes.
Sean	si fueren.	Esten	si estuvieren.	Sejão	se forem.	Estejão	se estiverem.
In <i>ra</i>	in <i>se</i> .	In <i>ra</i>	in <i>se</i> .	In <i>ra</i>	in <i>se</i> .	In <i>ra</i>	in <i>se</i> .
Fuera	fuese.	Estuviera	estuviese.	Fora	fosse.	Estivera	estivesse.
Fueras	fueses.	Estuvieras	estuvieses.	Foras	fosses.	Estiveras	estivesses.
Fuera	fuese.	Estuviera	estuviese.	Fora	fosse.	Estivera	estivesse.
Fueramos	fuesemos.	Estuvieramos	estuviesemos.	Foramos	fossemos.	Estiveramos	estivessemos.
Fuerais	fueseis.	Estuvierais	estuvieseis.	Forais	fossais.	Estiverais	estivesseis.
Fueran	fuesen.	Estuvieran	estuviesen.	Forão	fossem.	Estiverão	estivessem.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

## FRENCH.

Past Participle.  
To have been.  
Having been.

Past Participle.  
Avoir été.  
Ayant été.

## ITALIAN.

Past Participle.  
Essere stato.  
Essendo stato.

## Indicative Mood.

Preterite Indefinite.  
I have been.  
Thou hast been.  
He has been.  
We have been.  
You have been.  
They have been.

Preterite Indefinite.  
J'ai été.  
Tu as été.  
Il a été.  
Nous avons été.  
Vous avez été.  
Ils ont été.

Preterite Indefinite.  
Sono stato.  
Sei stato.  
È stato.  
Siamo stati.  
Siete stati.  
Sono stati.

Pluperfect.  
I had been.  
Thou hadst been.  
He had been.  
We had been.  
You had been.  
They had been.

Pluperfect.  
J'avais été.  
Tu avais été.  
Il avait été.  
Nous avions été.  
Vous aviez été.  
Ils avaient été.

Pluperfect.  
Era stato.  
Eri stato.  
Era stato.  
Eravamo stati.  
Eravate stati.  
Erano stati.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

## Infinitive Mood.

## SPANISH.

## Past Participle.

Haber sido	haber estado.
Habiendo sido	habiendo estado.

## PORTUGUESE.

## Past Participle.

Ter sido,	or	estado.
Tendo sido,	or	estado.

## Indicative Mood.

## Preterite Indefinite.

He sido	he estado.
Has sido	has estado.
Ha sido	ha estado.
Hemos sido	hemos estado.
Habeis sido	habeis estado.
Han sido	han estado.

## Preterite Indefinite.

Tenho sido,	or	estado.
Tens sido	"	"
Tem sido	"	"
Temos sido	"	"
Tendes sido	"	"
Têm sido	"	"

## Pluperfect.

Habia sido	habia estado.
Habias sido	habias estado.
Habia sido	habia estado.
Habiamos sido	habiamos estado.
Habiais sido	habiais estado.
Habian sido	habian estado.

## Pluperfect.

Tinha sido,	or	estado.
Tinhas sido	"	"
Tinha sido	"	"
Tinhamos sido	"	"
Tinheis sido	"	"
Tinhão sido	"	"

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

Preterite Anterior.

I had been.

Thou hadst been.

He had been.

We had been.

You had been.

They had been.

Future Anterior.

I shall have been.

Thou shalt have been.

He shall have been.

We shall have been.

You shall have been.

They shall have been.

## FRENCH.

Preterite Anterior.

J'eus été.

Tu eus été.

Il eut été.

Nous eûmes été.

Vous eûtes été.

Ils eurent été.

Future Anterior.

J'aurai été.

Tu auras été.

Il aura été.

Nous aurons été.

Vous aurez été.

Ils auront été.

## ITALIAN.

Preterite Anterior.

Fui stato.

Fosti stato.

Fu stato.

Fummo stati.

Foste stati.

Furono stati.

Future Anterior.

Sarò stato.

Sarai stato.

Sarà stato.

Saremo stati.

Sarete stati.

Saranno stati.

## Conditional Mood.

I should have been.

Thou shouldst have been.

He should have been.

We should have been.

You should have been.

They should have been.

J'aurais été.

Tu aurais été.

Il aurait été.

Nous aurions été.

Vous auriez été.

Ils auraient été.

Sarei stato.

Saresti stato.

Sarebbe stato.

Saremmo stati.

Sareste stati.

Sarebbero stati.

Indicative Mood—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

## Preterite Anterior.

Hube sido	hube estado.
Hubiste sido	habiste estado.
Hubo sido	hubo estado.
Hubimos sido	hubimos estado.
Hubisteis sido	hubisteis estado.
Hubieron sido	hubieron estado.

## Future Anterior.

Habré sido	habré estado.
Habras sido	habras estado.
Habrá sido	habrá estado.
Habremos sido	habremos estado.
Habreis sido	habreis estado.
Habran sido	habran estado.

## PORTUGUESE.

## Preterite Anterior,

This tense not used.	
See remarks on the Portuguese future tense, page 241.	

## Conditional Mood.

Habria sido	habria estado.
Habrias sido	habrias estado.
Habria sido	habria estado.
Habriama sido	habriamos estado.
Habriais sido	habriais estado.
Habrian sido	habrian estado.

Teria sido,	or, estado.
Terias sido,	„ „
Teria sido,	„ „
Teriamos sido,	„ „
Terieis sido,	„ „
Terião sido,	„ „

## VERBS.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Preterite.

That I may have been.  
That thou mayst have been.  
That he may have been.  
That we may have been.  
That you may have been.  
That they may have been.

FRENCH.

Que j'ayé été.  
Que tu aies été.  
Qu'il ait été.  
Que nous ayons été.  
Que vous ayez été.  
Qu'ils aient été.

ITALIAN.

Sia stato.  
Sia stato.  
Sia stato.  
Siamo stati.  
Siate stati.  
Siano stati.

Pluperfect.

That I might have been.  
That thou mightst have been.  
That he might have been.  
That we might have been.  
That you might have been.  
That they might have been.

Pluperfect.

Que j'eusse été.  
Que tu eusses été.  
Qu'il eût été.  
Que nous eussions été.  
Que vous eussiez été.  
Qu'ils eussent été.

Pluperfect.

Fossi stato.  
Fossi stato.  
Fosse stato.  
Fossimo stati.  
Foste stati.  
Fossero stati.

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Be."

137. *Être*, To be.

The past participle, *été*, is invariable, whatever may be the words which precede or follow it.

*Essere*, To be.

The past participle, *stato*, varies according to the gender and number of its subject.

## Subjunctive Mood.

	SPANISH.		PORTUGUESE.	
	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.
Haya		si hubiere	Tenha	se tiver
Hayas	sido or estado	si hubieres	Tenhas	se tiveres
Haya		si hubiere	Tenha	se tiver
Hayamos	sido or estado	si hubieremos	Tenhâmos	se tivermos
Hayaís		si hubiereis	Tenhais	se tiverdes
Hayan		si hubieren	Tenham	se tiverem
In <i>ra.</i>	in <i>se.</i>		In <i>ra.</i>	
Hubiera	hubiese		Tivéra	tivesse
Hubieras	hubieses	sido or estado.	Tivéras	tivesses
Hubiera	hubiese		Tivéra	tivesse
Hubieramos	hubieseamos		Tiveramos	tivessemos
Hubieraís	hubieseis	sido or estado.	Tivéreis	tivesseis
Hubieran	hubiesen		Tivérão	tivessem

## Remarks on Auxiliary Verb "To Be."

*Ser* and *Estar*.—There are in the Spanish, as in Portuguese, two verbs which signify *To be*; but they must not be used indiscriminately.

Note *a.*—D'Orsey, in his grammar of the Portuguese language, draws the distinction between *ser* and *estar* as follows (and the same remarks may apply to the Spanish verbs):—"Está is used for *is* when time, place, and circumstances are spoken of; but é is employed when a permanent quality is referred to—a agua está quente, the water is hot (temporarily); a agua do mar é salgada, sea water is salt (always). *Ser* expresses attributes or permanent qualities. Sou doente is, I am always ill, an invalid; but estou doente means, I am at present unwell. *Estar* to accidents or temporary states, qualities, positions, circumstances; as, estou cansado, I am tired."

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

138. This auxiliary serves to conjugate all passive verbs ; as, *il est aimé*, he is loved.

139. When preceded by *ce*, the verb is placed either in the singular or plural, according to the number of the noun which follows, although the pronoun remains in the singular, as,

*C'est une femme*      it is a woman.

*Ce sont des femmes*    they are women.

*C'est* may be employed before the pronouns *moi*, *toi*, *lui*, *elle*, *nous*, *vous*; as, *c'est moi*, *c'est nous*, &c.; but before *eux* and *elles* the verb should be in the plural; as, *ce sont eux*; *ce sont elles*.

140. Sometimes, by an idiom of the language, *est* is in the capacity of an impersonal verb ; as, *il est des hommes*, there are men.

## ITALIAN.

The auxiliary, *essere*, not only serves to conjugate all passive verbs, but, unlike the verb *to be* in the other languages, it is employed in the formation of its own compound tenses.

*Examples.*

*Egli è stato*                  he has been.

*Ella è stata*                  she has been.

*I signori sono stati*        the gentlemen have been.

*Le donne sono state*        the women have been.

*Remark.*—The third person singular of the present indicative, *è*, is distinguished by an accent from the conjunction *e*, and.

## SPANISH.

*Ser* serves to conjugate all passive verbs, as él *es* }  
 amado, he is loved, and is always employed when we } wish to express some *absolute, inherent* quality which is } not temporary or accidental (See Note *a*, p. 175.) } Same of *Ser*.

*Examples.*

Yo soy Frances	I am a Frenchman.
Él <i>es</i> soldado	he is a soldier.
Él <i>es</i> hermoso	he is handsome.
El hierro <i>es</i> duro	iron is hard.
<i>Es</i> de oro	it is of gold.

*Estar* is always used with the *present participle*, and }  
 serves in other cases to express any *accidental condition*, } Same.  
 or anything which is liable to change.

*Examples.*

Está hablando	he is speaking.
Estaba presente	he was present.
Estoy triste	I am sad.
Estan malos	they are ill.

*Remark.*—The meaning of an adjective often varies }  
 according to the verb which accompanies it; as } Same remark.

<i>Es</i> malo	he is wicked.
<i>Está</i> malo	he is ill.

## PORTUGUESE.

Eu <i>sou</i> francez	I am a Frenchman.
Elle <i>é</i> soldado	he is a soldier.
Ella <i>é</i> bonita	she is pretty.
O ferro <i>é</i> duro	iron is hard.
É de ouro	it is of gold.

*Examples.*

Está fallando	he is speaking.
Estava presente	he was present.
Estou triste	I am sad.
Estão doentes	they are ill.

## Models of French Regular Verbs.

## FOUR CONJUGATIONS.

1st in <i>er.</i>	2nd in <i>ir.</i>	3rd in <i>oir.</i>	4th in <i>re.</i>
Parler.	Finir.	Recevoir.	Rendre.
To speak.	To finish.	To receive.	To render.
		Participle Present.	
Parlant.	Finissant.	Recevant.	Rendant.
Speaking.	Finishing.	Receiving.	Rendering.
		Participle Past.	
Parlé.	Fini.	Reçu.	Rendu.
Spoken.	Finished.	Received.	Rendered.
		Compounds.	
Avoir parlé.	Avoir fini.	Avoir reçu.	Avoir rendu.
Ayant parlé.	Ayant fini.	Ayant reçu.	Ayant rendu.

## Infinitive Mood.

Present.		Imperfect.		Preterite.	
Je parle.	Je finis.	Je reçois.	Je rendais.	Parlai.	Temei.
tu parles.	tu finis,	tu reçois.	tu rendais.	parlas.	temesti.
il parle.	il finit.	il reçoit.	il rendait.	parlò.	temè.
nous parlons.	nous finissons.	nous recevons.	nous rendions.	parlammo.	tememmo.
vous parlez.	vous finissez.	vous recevez.	vous rendiez.	parlaste.	temestete.
ils parlent.	ils finissent.	ils reçoivent.	ils rendaient.	parlarono.	temerono.
Je parlais.	Je finissais.	Je recevais.	Je rendais.	Parlava.	Temeva.
tu parlais.	tu finissais.	tu recevais.	tu rendais.	parlavi.	temevi.
il parlait.	il finissait.	il recevait.	il rendait.	parlava.	temeva.
nous parlions.	nous finissions.	nous recevions.	nous rendions.	parlavamo.	temevamo.
vous parliez.	vous finissiez.	vous receviez.	vous rendiez.	parlavate.	temevate.
ils parlaient.	ils finissaient.	ils recevaient.	ils rendaient.	parlavano.	temevano.
Je parlai.	Je finis.	Je reçus.	Je rendis.	Parlai.	Temei.
tu parlas.	tu finis.	tu reçus.	tu rendis.	parlasti.	temesti.
il parla.	il finit.	il reçut.	il rendit.	parlò.	temè.
nous parlâmes.	nous finîmes.	nous reçûmes.	nous rendimes.	parlammo.	tememmo.
vous parlates.	vous finites.	vous reçûtes.	vous rendites.	parlaste.	temestete.
ils parlèrent.	ils finirent.	ils reçurent.	ils rendirent.	parlarono.	temerono.

## Models of Italian Regular Verbs.

## THREE CONJUGATIONS.

2nd in <i>ere.</i>	3rd in <i>ire</i> , 1st class.	3rd in <i>ire</i> , 2nd class.
Temere.	Sentire.	Finire.
To fear.	To hear.	To finish.
	Participle Present.	
Temendo.	Sentendo.	
Fearing.	Hearing.	
	Participle Past.	
Temuto.	Sentito.	
Feared.	Heard.	
	Compounds.	
Aver temuto.	Aver sentito.	
Avendo temuto.	Avendo sentito.	

## Indicative Mood.

Present.				Present.	
Je temo.	Parlo.	Temo.	Parlo.	Sento.	Finisco.
tu temi.	parli.	temi.	parla	senti.	finisci.
il teme.	parla	teme.	parlamo.	sente.	finisce.
nous temiamo.	parlate.	temiamo.	temiamo.	sentiamo.	finiamo.
vous temete.	parlano.	temete.	temete.	sentite.	finite.
ils temono.	parlano.	temono.	temono.	sentono.	finiscono.
Imperfect.				Imperfect.	
Je temeva.	Parlava.	Temeva.	Parlava.	Sentiva.	
tu temevi.	parlavi.	temevi.	parlavi.	sentivi.	
il temeva.	parlava.	temeva.	parlava.	sentiva.	
nous temevamo.	parlavate.	temevamo.	parlavate.	sentivamo.	
vous temevate.	parlavano.	temevate.	parlavano.	sentivate.	
ils temevano.	parlavano.	temevano.	parlavano.	sentivano.	

Imperfect.				Preterite.	
Je temei.	Parlai.	Temei.	Parlai.	Sentii.	
tu temesti.	parlasti.	temesti.	parlasti.	sentisti.	
il temè.	parlò.	temè.	parlò.	sentì.	
nous tememmo.	parlammo.	tememmo.	parlammo.	sentimmo.	
vous temestete.	parlaste.	temestete.	parlaste.	sentiste.	
ils temerono.	parlarono.	temerono.	parlarono.	sentirono.	

{ as Sentire.

{ idem.

# VERBS.

179

## Models of Spanish Regular Verbs.

### THREE CONJUGATIONS.

1st in <i>ar.</i>	2nd in <i>er.</i>	3rd in <i>ir.</i>
Hablar.	Temer.	Sufrir.
To speak.	To fear.	To suffer.
	Participle Present.	
Hablando.	Temiendo.	Suriendo.
Speaking.	Fearing.	Suffering.
	Participle Past.	
Hablado.	Temido.	Sufrido.
Spoken.	Feared.	Suffered.
	Compounds.	
Haber hablado.	Haber temido.	Haber sufrido.
Habiendo hablado.	Habiendo temido.	Habiendo sufrido.

### Infinitive Mood.

1st in <i>ar.</i>	2nd in <i>er.</i>	3rd in <i>ir.</i>
Amar.		
To love.		
	Participle Present.	
Amando.	Comiendo.	Eating.
Loving.		
	Participle Past.	
Amado.	Comido	Eaten.
Loved.		
	Compounds.	
Ter amado.	Ter comido.	
Tendo amado.	Tendo comido.	
		Ter admittido.
		Tendo admittido.

### Indicative Mood.

Present.	Present.	Present.
Hablo.	Temo.	Amo.
hablas.	temes.	amas.
habla.	teme.	ama.
hablamos.	tememos.	amamos.
hablais.	temeis.	amais.
hablan.	temen.	amão.
Imperfect.	Imperfect.	Imperfect.
Hablabá.	Temía.	Amava.
hablabás.	temías.	amavas.
hablabá.	temía.	amava.
hablabamos.	temíamos.	amavamos.
hablabais.	temiais.	amaveis.
hablaban.	temian.	amavão.
Preterite.	Preterite.	Preterite.
Hablé.	Temí.	Amei.
hablaste.	temiste.	amaste.
hablé.	temió.	amou.
hablamos.	temimos.	amámos.
hablasteis.	temisteis.	amásteis.
hablaron.	temieron.	amáraõ.

## Models of Portuguese Regular Verbs.

### THREE CONJUGATIONS.

1st in <i>er.</i>	2nd in <i>er.</i>	3rd in <i>ir.</i>
Comer.		
To eat.		
	Participle Present.	
Comendo.	Admittindo.	Admitting.
Eating.		
	Participle Past.	
Comido	Admittido.	
Eaten.	Admitted.	
	Compounds.	
Ter comido.		
Tendo comido.		
	Ter admittido.	
	Tendo admittido.	

Present.	Present.	Present.
Como.	Comes.	admitte.
comes.	come.	admittes.
com.	comem.	admittite.
comemos.	comemos.	admittimos.
coméis.	coméis.	admittis.
comem.	comem.	admittem.

Imperfect.	Imperfect.	Imperfect.
Comia.	comias.	Admittia.
comias.	comia.	admittias.
comia.	comia.	admittia.
comiamos.	comiamos.	admittiamos.
comiaeis.	comiaeis.	admittieis.
comiõo.	comiõo.	admittiõo.

Preterite.	Preterite.	Preterite.
Comi.	comeste.	Admitti.
comeste.	comeo.	admittiste.
comeo.	comemos.	admittio.
comemos.	comestes.	admittistes.
comestes.	comerão.	admittirão.

Models of French and Italian Regular Verbs—continued.

### **Indicative Mood—continued.**

Future.				Future.			
Je parlerai.	Je finirai.	Je recevrai.	Je rendrai.	Parlerò.	Temerò.	Sentirò.	
tu parleras.	tu finiras.	tu recevras.	tu rendras.	parlerai.	temera.	sentirai.	
il parlera.	il finira.	il recevra.	il rendra.	parlerà.	temerà.	sentirà.	
nous parlerons.	nous finirons.	nous receverons.	nous rendrons.	parleremo.	temeremo.	sentiremo.	
vous parlerez.	vous finirez.	vous receverez.	vous rendrez.	parlerete.	temerete.	sentirete.	
ils parleront.	ils finiront.	ils recevront.	ils rendront.	parleranno.	temeranno.	sentiranno.	

} as Sentire.

### Conditional Mood.

<b>Je parlerais.</b>	<b>Je finirais.</b>	<b>Je recevais.</b>	<b>Je rendrais.</b>	<b>Parlerel.</b>	<b>Temerei.</b>	<b>Sentirei.</b>
<i>tu parlerais.</i>	<i>tu finirais.</i>	<i>tu recevais.</i>	<i>tu rendrais.</i>	<i>parleresti.</i>	<i>temeresti.</i>	<i>sentiresti.</i>
<i>il parlerait.</i>	<i>il finirait.</i>	<i>il recevrait.</i>	<i>il rendrait.</i>	<i>parlerebbe.</i>	<i>temerebbe.</i>	<i>sentirebbe.</i>
<i>nous parlerions.</i>	<i>nous finirions.</i>	<i>nous recevrions.</i>	<i>nous rendrions.</i>	<i>parleremmo.</i>	<i>temeremmo.</i>	<i>sentiremmo.</i>
<i>vous parleriez.</i>	<i>vous finiriez.</i>	<i>vous recevriez.</i>	<i>vous rendriez.</i>	<i>parlereste.</i>	<i>temerreste.</i>	<i>sentirereste.</i>
<i>ils parleraient.</i>	<i>ils finiraient.</i>	<i>ils recevraient.</i>	<i>ils rendraient.</i>	<i>parlerebbero.</i>	<i>temerebbero.</i>	<i>sentirebbero.</i>

} idem

### **Imperative Mood.**

Parle.	Finis.	Reçois.	Rends.	Parla.	Temi.	Senti.	
qu'il parle.	qu'il finisse.	qu'il reçoive.	qu'il rende.	parli.	tema.	senta.	{ Finisci.
parlons.	finissons.	recevons.	rendons.	parliamo.	temiamo.	sentiamo.	finisca.
parlez.	finissez.	recevez.	rendez.	parlate.	temete.	sentite.	finiamo.
qu'ils parlent.	qu'ils finissent.	qu'ils recoivent.	qu'ils rendent.	parlino.	temano.	sentano.	finite.
							finiscano.

Finisci.

### Subjunctive Mood.

Present.				Present.			
Que je parle.	Que je finisse.	Que je reçoive.	Que je rende.	Parli.	Tema.	Senta.	Finisca.
que tu parles.	que tu finisses.	que tu reçoives.	que tu rendes.	parli.	tema.	senta.	finisca.
qu'il parle.	qu'il finisse.	qu'il reçoive.	qu'il rende.	parli.	tema.	senta.	finisca.
que nous parlions.	que nous finis- sions.	que nous rece- vions.	que nous rendions.	parliamo.	temiamo.	sentiamo.	finiamo.
que vous parliez.	que vous finissiez.	que vous receviez.	que vous rendiez.	parliate.	temiate.	sentiate.	finiate.
qu'ils parlent.	qu'ils finissent.	qu'ils reçoivent.	qu'ils rendent.	parlino.	temano.	sentano.	finiscano.

Models of Spanish and Portuguese Regular Verbs—*continued.*Indicative Mood—*continued.*

	Future.		Future.		Future.
Hablaré.	Temeré.	Sufriré.	Amarei.	Comerei.	Admittirei.
hablarás.	temeras.	sufrirás.	amarás.	comerás.	admittirás.
hablará.	temerá.	sufrirá.	amará.	comerá.	admittirá.
hablaremos.	temeremos.	sufriremos.	amarémos.	comeremos.	admittiremos.
hablareis.	temereis.	sufrireis.	amaréis.	comereis.	admittireis.
hablan.	temeran.	sufriran.	amarão.	comerão.	admittirão.

## Conditional Mood.

	Temeria.	Sufriria.	Amaria.	Comeria.	Admittiria.
Hablaría.	temerias.	sufrirías.	amarías.	comerias.	admittirias.
hablarías.	temeria.	sufriría.	amaría.	comeria.	admittiria.
hablaría.	temeríamos.	sufriríamos.	amaríamos.	comeríamos.	admittiríamos.
hablariámos.	temeríais.	sufriríais.	amarieis.	comerieis.	admittirieis.
hablariais.	temerian.	sufririan.	amarião.	comerião.	admittirão.

## Imperative Mood.

	teme.	Sufre.	Ama.	Come.	Admitte.
Habla.	tema.	sufra.	ame.	coma.	admitta.
hable.	temas.	suframos.	amémos.	comámos.	admittamos.
hablemos.	temed.	sufrid.	amai.	comei.	admitti.
hablad.	teman.	sufran.	amem.	comão.	admittão.

## Subjunctive Mood.

Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.	Present.	Future.
Hable	si hablare.	Tema	si temiere.	Sufra	si sufriere.	Ame	se amar.	Coma	se comer.
hables	si hablares.	temas	si temieres.	sufras	si sufrieres.	ames	se amares.	comas	se comeres.
hable	si hablare.	tema	si temiere.	sufra	si sufriere.	ame	se amar.	coma	se comer.
hablemos	si habláremos.	temamos	si temiéremos.	suframos	si sufriéremos.	amemos	se amarmos.	comámos	se comermos.
hableis	si habláreis.	temais	si temiéreis.	sufrais	si sufriereis.	ameis	se amardes.	comais	se comerdeis.
hablen	si habláren.	teman	si temieren.	sufran	si sufrieren.	amem	se amarem.	comão	se comerem.

## Models of French and Italian Regular Verbs—continued.

## Subjunctive Mood—continued.

## Imperfect.

Que je parlasse.	Que je finisse.	Que je reçusse.	Que je rendisse.
que tu parlasses.	que tu finisses.	que tu reçusses.	que tu rendisses.
qu'il parlat.	qu'il finit.	qu'il reçut.	qu'il rendit.
que nous parlâs-	que nous finis-	que nous reçus-	que nous rendis-
sions.	sions.	sions.	sions.
que vous parlas-	que vous finissiez.	que vous reçus-	que vous rendis-
siez.	siez.	siez.	siez.
qu'ils parlassent.	qu'ils finissent.	qu'ils reçussent.	qu'ils rendissent.

## Imperfect.

Parlassi.	Temessi.	Sentissi.
parlassi.	temessi.	sentissi.
parlasse.	temesse.	sentisse.
parlassimo.	temessimo.	sentissimo.
parlaste.	temeste.	sentiste.
parlassero.	temessero.	sentissero.

} as Sentire.

## Remarks on Regular Verbs.

## FRENCH.

The second person singular of all the moods and tenses (except the imperative, first conjugation) terminates in *s*.

In the preterite of all conjugations, the first and second persons plural take a circumflex accent on the first vowel of the last syllable.

In the future, the first person singular always ends in *ai*, and the same person of the conditional in *ais*: beginners are apt to confound the two.

In the imperfect of the subjunctive, the third person singular always takes a circumflex accent on the last vowel.

## ITALIAN.

In the first conjugation, the first person singular of the imperfect indicative sometimes ends in *o*; but this is now considered vulgar; it is better to say *io parlava* than *io parlavo*.

Note that in the future and conditional of verbs in *are* the *a* is changed into *e*: as, *parlare*, *parlero*, *parlerò*.

In the second conjugation, *temére* is the only regular verb having the accent (though not always written) falling on the last *e* but one.

Verbs which end in *care* and *gare* take the letter *h* before *e* and *i*, in order to preserve the hard sound of *c* and *g*: as, *cercare*, to seek; *cercherò*, I will seek.

## Models of Spanish and Portuguese Regular Verbs—continued.

## Subjunctive Mood—continued.

## Imperfect.

In <i>ra.</i>	in <i>se.</i>										
Hablara	hablase.	Temiera	temiese.	Sufriera	sufriese.	Amára	amassee.	Coméra	comesee.	Admittira	admittisse.
hablaras	habláses.	temieras	temiese.	sufrieras	sufrieses.	amáras	amassee.	coméras	comesees.	admittiras	admittisses.
hablara	hablase.	temiera	temiese.	sufriera	sufriese.	amára	amassee.	coméra	comesee.	admittira	admittisse.
habláramos	hablásemos.	temieramos	temiésemos.	sufrieramos	sufriesemos.	amáramos	amassemos.	comeramos	comesemos.	admittiramos	admittissemos.
hablárais	habláscis.	temierais	temíseis.	sufrierais	sufrieseis.	amáreis	amasseis.	coméreis	comeseis.	admittireis	admittisseis.
habláran	hablasen.	temieran	temiesen.	sufrieran	sufriesen.	amárão	amassem.	comérão	comesem.	admittirão	admittissem.

## Remarks on Regular Verbs.

## SPANISH.

The conjugations show that in the subjunctive mood there are certain tenses in Spanish which are not possessed by the French and Italians: this is fully explained under the heading of subjunctive mood, p. 249.

In Spanish, as in other languages, there are many regular verbs which require a change in their radical letters, in order to preserve the hard or soft sounds of certain particular consonants.

Verbs ending in

*car* change *c* into *qu* before *e*.

Same as Spanish.

*cer* and *cir* change *c* into *z* before the letters *a* and *o*.

Verbs in *cer* make *ç* before *a* and *o*.

## PORTUGUESE.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

For examples on these remarks refer to the conjugations. Verbs having the radical *c* soft give it the cedilla (s) before *a*, *o*, or *u*: as, *recevoir*; *reçois*, *reçus*; *menacer*, *menaçais*.

Verbs ending in *eler* and *eter* in the infinitive, double the *l* or *t* before *e* mute: as, *jeter*, to throw; *je jette*, I throw.

Verbs in *ger* retain the *e* before *a* or *o* solely to preserve the soft sound of the *g*: as, *venger*, to revenge; *nous vengeons*.

Note *a*.—Corticelli divides regular verbs into four conjugations, making *leggere*, to read, a form of the third; this will be found among the *irregular* verbs, to which it more conveniently belongs.

Note *b*.—There has been much discussion about the termination of the third person plural in several tenses of verbs, whether it should be written *ão* or *am*. The latter is now the favourite mode.

Luiz A. Rebello da Silva, in a work published (Lisbon, 1862) for the Portuguese Academy of Sciences, uses *am* for all verbs

## ITALIAN.

Those in *ciare* and *giare* drop the *i* before *e*, or when meeting another *i*: as, *mangiare*, to eat; *mangerò*, I will eat: while verbs ending in *chiare* and *gliare* drop the *i* only before another letter *i*: as, *pigliare*, to take; *tu pigli*. Verbs in *cire* keep the *i* before *a* and *o*, in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c*: as *cucire*, to sew; *cucio*, I sew.

(Note *a*.)

## SPANISH.

Verbs ending in

*ger* and *gir* change *g* into *j* before the letters *a* }  
and *o*. } Same.

*quir* change *qu* into *c* before the letters *a* and *o*.

*guir* suppress the *u* before the letters *a* and *o*.

*gar* add *u* before the letter *e*.

*zar* change the *z* into *c* when coming before the  
letter *e*.

## PORTUGUESE.

Verbs in *oer* change *o* into *ô* before *a* and *o*.

Same.

Same.

(Note b.)

except *são* and *estão*. D'Orsey (1860) writes:—"The third person plural may end *ão* or *am*, e.g. *são*, *sam*; *erão*, *eram*. The former is more usual, the latter gradually coming into practice."

The student is recommended to adopt the termination most common in the place where his knowledge of the language may be required. This remark can also apply to the third person singular of the preterite in the second and third conjugations, where the letter *u* is now more frequently employed instead of *o*: as, *comeu*.

With these observations, it has not been thought necessary to alter the generally adopted method of conjugation.

## Irregular Verbs.

		FRENCH.		Able (be.)		ITALIAN.	
		Infinitive. Pouvant.		Pu.		Potere.	
Pouvoir.		Indicative Present. Imperfect.		Pouvez	peuvent	Posso	puoi
Puis, or peux	peux	peut pouvons					può
Pouvais	pouvais	pouvait pouvions	Preterite.	pouviez	pouvaient		possiamo
Pus	pus	put pûmes		pûtes	purent		
		Future.				Future.	
Pourrai	pourras	pourra pourrons	Conditional.	pourrez	pourront	Potrò	potrai
Pourrais	pourrais	pourrait pourrions				Potrei	potresti
Puisse	puisses	puisse puissions	Subjunctive Present.	puissiez	puissent	Possa	possa
Pusse	pusses	pût puissions	Imperfect.	pussiez	pussent		possiamo

## Acquire.

		Infinitive. Acquérand.		Acquis.		
		Indicative Present. Imperfect.				
Acquiers	acquiers	acquiert acquérons		acquérez	acquièrent	
Acquérais	acquérais	acquérait acquérions		acquériez	acquéraient	
Acquis	acquis	acquit acquîmes	Preterite.	acquîtes	acquirent	
Acquerrai	acquerras	acquerra acquerrons	Future.	acquerrez	acquerront	
Acquerrais	acquerrais	acquerrait acquerrions	Conditional.	acquerriez	acquerraient	
			Imperative.			
	acquiers	acquièrre acquérons		acquérez	acquièrent	
Acquière	acquières	acquièrre acquérions	Subjunctive Present.	acquériez	acquièrent	
Acquisse	acquisses	acquit acquîssions	Imperfect.	acquissiez	acquissent	

Acquistare—Regular.

## Irregular Verbs.

		SPANISH.		Able (be.)		PORTUGUESE.			
Poder.		Infinitive. Pudiendo.		Podido.		Poder.		Infinitive. Podendo.	
Puedo	puedes	Indicative present. puede      podemos		podeis	pueden	Posso	podes	Indicative present. pode      podemos	
Pude	pudiste	pudo      púdimos	Preterite.	pudisteis	pudiéron	Pude	pudeste, or {poude, or} {pôde}	Preterite pudemos, or pôde      podemos	podestes      puderão, or poderão
Podré	podras	podrá      podremos	Future.	podreis	podran				
Podría	podrias	podría      podríamos	Conditional.	podriais	podrian				
Pueda	puedas	pueda      podamos	Subjunctive present.	podais	puedan'	Posso	possas	Subjunctive present. possa      possamos	possais      possão
Pudiera	pudieras	pudiera      pudiéramos	Imperfect.	pudiérais	pudieran	Pudera	puderas	Imperfect. pudera      puderamos	pudereis      puderão
Pudiese	pudieses	pudiese      pudiesemos	Future.	pudieseis	pudiesen	Pudesse	pudesses	Future. pudesse      pudessemos	pudesceis      pudessem
Pudiere	pudieres	pudiere      pudieremos		pudiereis	pudieren	Puder	puderes	Future. puder      pudermos	puderdes      puderem
Acquire.									
Adquirir.		Infinitive. Adquiriendo.		Adquirido.					
Adquiero	adquieres	Indicative present. adquiere adquirimos		adquiris	adquieren				
—	adquiere	Imperative. adquiera adquiramos		adquirid	adquieran				
Adquiera	adquieras	Subjunctive present. adquiera adquiramos		adquirais	adquieran				

Adquirir—Regular.

## VERBS.

## Appear.

## FRENCH.

Paraitre—Regular.

Apparire.			ITALIAN.		
Apparisco			Infinitive. Apparendo.		
Apparisco      apparisci      { apparisce } { appare }      { appare }			Apparito, or Apparso. Indicative Present.		
Apparii Apparvi Apparsi			Preterite.		
{ apparisti      { apparì } { apparve } }			apparimmo      appariste { apparirono }		
Apparisca			Imperative. apparisci      apparisca      appariamo		
Appaia			Subjunctive Present. apparisca      apparisca      appariamo		
{ apparisca      { apparisca }			appariate      appariscano		

## Born (be.)

Naître.		Infinitive. Naissant.		Né.	Nascere.		Infinitive. Nascendo.		Nato.
Nais	nais	naît	naissions	naïssez	naissent				
Naissais	naissais	naissait	naissions	naissiez	naissaient				
Naquis	naquis	naquit	naquimes	naquîtes	naquirent	Nacqui	nascesti	nacque	nasceremo
Naîtrai	naîtras	naîtra	naîtrons	naîtrez	naîtront				
Naîtrais	naîtrais	naîtrait	naîtrions	naîtriez	naîtraient				
	nais	naisse	naissions	naïssez	naissent				
Naisse	naïssez	naisse	naissions	naïssez	naissent				
Naquisse	naquisses	naquit	naquissions	naquissiez	naquissent				

# VERBS.

189

## Appear.

### SPANISH.

		Infinitive. Pareciendo.	Parecido.	}
Parecer.		Indicative present. pareces.	parecido.	
Parezco	pareces.	parece	parecemos	
		pareceis	parecen	
		Imperative. parece	parezca	}
		parezcamos	pareced	
		Subjunctive present. parezca	parezcamos	
Parezca	parezcas	parezcais	parezcan	

### PORTUGUESE.

Apparecer—Regular.

Except that verbs in *cer* make *ç* (soft) before *a* and *o*.

## Born (be.)

		Infinitive. Naciendo.	Nacido.	}
Nacer.		Indicative Present. naces.	nacido.	
Nazco	naces	nace	nacemos	
		naceis	nacen	
		*	*	}
		Imperative. nazca	nazcámōs	
		Subjunctive Present. nazca	nazcamos	
Nazca	nazcas	názcais	názcan	

Nascer—Regular.

## VERBS.

## Choose.

## FRENCH.

Choisir—Regular.

	Scegliere.	ITALIAN.		
		Infinitive.	Scigliendo.	Scelto.
Scelgo}	scegli	sceglie	scegliamo	scegliete
Scelgo }			{ scegliamo	{ sceglio
Scelsi	scegliesti	scelse	scagliammo	scaglieste
			Preterite.	scelsero
	scegli	{ sceglia }	scegliamo	scegliete
		{ sceglia }		{ sceglio }
Sceglia }	scelga	scelga	scegliamo	scegliete
Scelga }			{ sceglio }	{ sceglio }
			Subjunctive present.	
				idem.

## Come.

	Venir.	Infinitive.	Venant.	Venu.	Venu.	Venire.	Infinitive.	Venendo.	Venuto.
		Indicative Present.					Indicative present.		
Viens	viens	vient	venons	venez	viennent	Vengo	vieni	viene	venite
Venais	venais	venait	Imperfect.	veniez	venaient				
Vins	vins	vint	venions	vîtes	vinrent	Venni	venisti	venne	veniste
Viendrai	viendras	viendra	viendrons	viendrez	viendront	Verrò	verrai	verrà	veniste
Viendrais	viendrais	viendrait	viendrions	viendriez	viendraient	Verrei	verresti	verrebbe	vennero
	viens	vienne	venons	venez	viennent			verremo	verrete
Vienne	viennes	vienne	Subjunctive present.	veniez	viennent	Venga	venga	venga	vengano
Vinsse	vinsses	vint	Imperfect.	vinssiez	vinssent			veniamo	veniate

# VERBS.

191

## Choose.

		SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE.			
		Infinitive. Elegiendo.		Elegido.		Eleger.		Infinitive. Elegendo.	
Elegir.		Indicative Present. eligo eliges	elige elegimos	elegis eligen	Elejo	eleges	Indicative Present. elege elegemos	Elegido, or Eleito. elegeis elegem	
Elegí	elegiste	Preterite. eligio elige	eligio elegimos elija elijamos	elegisteis eligid	eligieron elijan				
		Imperative. eliga elijas	elijas elijamos	elijais elijan	Eleja	elejas	Subjunctive Present. eleja elejamos	elejas elejão	
Eligiera Eligiese	eligieras eligieses	Imperfect. eligiéra eligiéses	eligiéra eligiéramos eligiései eligiésemos	eligiérais eligiéseis	eligiéran eligiésen				
		Future. eligiere eligeres	eligiere eligiéremos	eligiéreis eligieren					

## Come.

		Infinitive. Viniendo.				Infinitive. Vindo.			
Venir.		Indicative Present. vieno viene		Venido.		Vir.		Vindo.	
Vengo		vienes	viene venimos	venis vienen	Venho	vens	vem vimos	vinde vêm	
Vine	veniste	Preterite. vino Future.	venimos	venisteis viniéron	Vinha	vinhas	vinha vinhamos	vinheis vinhão	
		Conditional. vendrá	vendrémos	vendreis vendran	Vim	vieste	veio viemos	viestes vierão	
Vendré	vendras	Subjunctive Present. vendrá	vendrémos						
		Conditional. vendria	vendriamos	vendriais vendrian					
Vendria	vendrias	Imperative. ven	venga vengámos	venid vengan	Vem		Imperative. venha venhamos	vinde venhão	
		Subjunctive Present. venga	vengamos	vengais vengan	Venha	venhas	Subjunctive Present. venha venhamos	venhais venhão	
Venga	vengas	Imperfect. venga	vengamos	vengais vengan	Venha	venhas	Imperfect. viera vieramos	viereis vierão	
		Imperfect. viniera	vinieramos	vinífras viniéran	Viera	vieras	Imperfect. viesse viessemos	viesseis viessem	
Viniese	vinieses	Future. viniese	viniésemos	viníseis viniesen	Viesse	viesses	Future. viesse vieremos	vierdes vierem	
		Future. Viniere	vinieremos	viniercis vinieren	Vier	vieres			

## VERBS.

## Conclude.

	FRENCH.					ITALIAN.			
	Infinitive. Concluant.		Conclu.	Concluez.	Concluere.	Infinitive. Concludendo.		Concluso.	
Conclure.	Indicative Present.								
Conclus	conclus	conclut	concluons	concluez	concluent				
Concluais	concluais	concluait	concluions	concluez	concluaient				
Conclus	conclus	conclut	conclumes	conclutes	conclurent	Conclusi	concldesti	concluse concludemmo	
Conclurai	concluras	conclura	conclurons	conclurez	concluront			concludeste conclusero	
Conclurai	conclrais	conclurait	conclursions	concluriez	concluraient				
		Imperative.							
	conclus	conclue	concluons	concluez	concluent				
Conclue	conclues	conclue	concluions	concluez	concluent				
Conclusse	conclusses	conclut	conclussions	conclussiez	conclussent				

## Conduct.

	Infinitive. Conduisant.				Conduit.	Condurre.	Infinitive. Conducendo.		Condotto.
	Indicative Present.		Conduit.	Condurre.		Condurre.	Indicative Present.		
Conduire.	Indicative Present.								
Conduis	conduis	conduit	conduisons	conduisez	conduisent	Conduco	conduci	conduce	conducete conducono
Conduisais	conduisais	conduisait	conduisions	conduisez	conduisaient	Conduceva,	&c.	Imperfect.	
Conduisis	conduisis	conduisit	conduisimes	conduisites	conduisirent	Condussi	conducesti	conduisse	conducemmo
Conduirai	conduiras	conduira	conduirons	conduirez	conduiront	Condurrò	condurrà	condurremo	condureste condussero
Conduirais	conduirais	conduirait	conduirions	conduiriez	conduiraint	Condurrei	condurresti	condurebbe	condurremmo
		Imperative.						Imperative.	
	conduis	conduise	conduisons	conduisez	conduisent	conduci	conduca	conduciamo	conducete conducano
Conduise	conduises	conduise	conduisions	conduisez	conduisent	Conduca	conduca	conduciamo	conduciate conducano
Conduisisse	conduisisse	conduisit	conduisissions	conduisissiez	conduisissent	Conducessi	conducessi	conducesse	conducessero
		Imperfect.						Imperfect.	

# VERBS.

193

## Conclude.

### SPANISH.

#### Infinitive.

#### Concluyendo.

#### Indicative Present.

Concluir.			Concluido or Concluso.	
Concluyo	concluyes	concluye	concluimos	

### PORtUGUESE.

## Concluir—Regular.

#### Imperative.

concluye	concluya	concluyamos	concluid	concluyan
Concluya	concluyas	concluya	concluyamos	concluyais

## Conduct.

### Infinitive.

#### Conduciendo.

#### Indicative Present.

Conducir.			Conducido.	
Conduzco	conduces	conduce	conducimos	

#### Preterite.

Conduje	condujiste	condujo	condujimos	condujisteis	condujeron
---------	------------	---------	------------	--------------	------------

#### Imperative.

conduce	conduzca	conduzcamos	conducid	conduzcan
Conduzca	conduzcas	conduza	conduzcamos	conduzcais
Condujera	condujeras	condujera	condujéramos	condujérais
Condujese	condujeses	condujese	condujésemos	condujeseis
Condujere	condujeres	condujere	condujéremos	condujéreis

## Conduzir—Regular.

Die.

		FRENCH.				ITALIAN.			
		Infinitive.		Mort.		Morire.		Morendo.	
Mourir.		Mourant.		Indicative Present.		Indicative Present.		Morto.	
Meurs	meurs	meurt	mourons	mourez	meurent	Muoio, or muoro } } muori	muore	moriamo	morite { muoiono muorono
Mourais	mourais	mourait	mourions	mouriez	mouraient				
Mourus	mourus	mourut	mourâmes	mourûtes	moururent				
Mourrai	mourras	mourra	Future. mourrons	mourrez	mourront	Moriro, or morrò } morrai	morrà	morremo	morrete morranno
Mourrais	mourrais	mourrait	Conditional. mourrions	mourriez	mourraient	Morrei	morresti	Conditional. morrebbe	Conditional. morremmo
	meurs	meure	Imperative. mourons	mourez	meurent		muori	muora	Imperative. moriamo
Meure	meures	meure	Subjunctive Present. mourions	mouriez	meurent	Muora	moura	muora	Subjunctive Present. moriamo
Mourusse	mourusses	mourût	Imperfect. mourussions	mourussiez	mourussent				

### **Do or Make.**

Faire.		Infinitive. Faisant.		Fait.		Fare.		Infinitive. Facendo.		Fatto.	
		Indicative Present. faît faisons						Indicative Present. facciamo			
		Imperfect. faisait faisions						Imperfect. facciammo			
Fais	fais	fait	faîsons	faites	font	Fo, or faccio	fai	fa	facciamo	fate	fanno
Faisais	faisais	faisait	faîsons	faisiez	faisaient	Faceva, &c.					
Fis	jis	fit	fitimes	fites	firent	Feci	facesti	fece	facemmo	faceste	fecero

## Die.

## SPANISH.

Infinitive.

Muriendo.

Muerto.

Morir.

Indicative Present.

muere      morimos

moris      mueren

Muero

Preterite.

murió      morímos

moristeis      murieron

Morf

Subjunctive Present.

muera      muramos

morid      mueran

Muera

Imperfect.

muera      muramos

murais      mueran

Muérese

Future.

murieras      murieremos

murierais      murieran

Muriera

Subjunctive Present.

muera      muramos

muriésemos      muriéseis

Muriése

Imperfect.

muriésemos      muriésemos

muriésemos      muriésemos

Muriere

Future.

murieras      murieremos

murierais      murieren

## PORTUGUESE.

Morrer—Regular.

## Do or Make.

Infinitive.

Fazendo.

Feito.

Hacer.

Indicative Present.

Haciendo.

Hecho.

Fazer.

Indicative Present.

Fazendo.

Feito.

Hago

Indicative Present.

haciendo.

haceis      hacen

Faço

fazes

Indicative Present.

fazemos

fazeis      fazem

Hice

Preterite.

hicimos

hicisteis      hicieron

Fiz

fizeste

Preterite.

fizemos

fizestes      fizerão

## VERBS.

Do or Make—*continued.*

FRENCH.						ITALIAN.			
Future.						Future.			
Ferai	feras	fera	ferons	ferez	feront	Farò, &c.			
Ferais	ferais	ferait	Conditional. ferions	feriez	feraient	Farei, &c.			Conditional.
	fais	fasse	Imperative. faisons	faites	fassent		fa	faccia	Imperative. facciamo
Fasse	fasses	fasse	Subjunctive Present. fassions	fassiez	fassent	Faccia	faccia	faccia	Subjunctive Present. facciamo
Fisse	fisses	fit	Imperfect. fissions	fissiez	fissent	Facessi	facessi	facesse	Imperfect. faccessimo
								facciate	facciano
								faceste	faccessero

## Drink.

Boire.				Bu				Bere, or Bevere.				Bevuto.			
Infinitive. Buvant.				Indicative Present. buveons				Bere, or Bevere.				Infinitive. Bevendo.			
Bois	bois	boit	buveons	buvez	boivent			Beo, Bevo, &c.				Indicative Present.			
Buvais	buvais	buvait	Imperfect. buvions	buviez	buvaient			Beveva, &c.				Imperfect.			
Bus	bus	but	Preterite. bûmes	bûtes	burent	Bevvi	bevesti					Preterite.	bevemmo	bevesto	bevvero
Boirai	boiras	boira	Future. boirons	boirez	boiront	Berò, Bevrò, &c.						Future.			
Boirais	boirais	boirait	Conditional. boirions	boiriez	boiraient	Berei, Beverei, &c.						Conditional.			
	bois	boive	Imperative. buveons	buvez	boivent		bevi, &c.					Imperative.			
Boive	boives	boive	Subjunctive Present. buvions	buviez	boivent	Beva, &c.						Subjunctive Present.			
Busse	busses	büt	Imperfect. bussions	bussiez	bussent	Bevessi, &c.						Imperfect.			

## Do or Make—continued.

## SPANISH.

Future.

Haré	haras	hará	harémos
------	-------	------	---------

Conditional.

Haria	harias	haria	haríamos
-------	--------	-------	----------

Imperative.

	haz	haga	hagámos
--	-----	------	---------

Subjunctive Present.

Haga	hagas	haga	hagamos
------	-------	------	---------

Imperfect.

Hiciera	hiciesas	hiciera	hiciéramos
---------	----------	---------	------------

Hiciese	hicieses	hiciese	hiciésemos
---------	----------	---------	------------

Future.

Hiciere	hiciéres	hiciere	hiciéremos
---------	----------	---------	------------

## PORTUGUESE.

Future.

Conditional.

Imperative.

Subjunctive Present.

Imperfect.

Future.

Regular.

## Drink.

Beber—Regular.

Beber—Regular.

## VERBS.

## Extinguish.

## FRENCH.

Infinitive.

Éteindre.

Indicative Present.

Éteignant.

Éteint.

Spengere, or Spegnere.

Spengendo, or Spegnendo.

## ITALIAN.

Infinitive.

Spento.

Éteins	éteins	éteint	éteignons	éteignez	éteignent	Spengo	spegni	spugne	spugniamo	spugnete	spengono
Éteignais	éteignais	éteignait	éteignions	éteigniez	éteignaient						
Éteignis	éteignis	éteignit	éteignimes	éteignites	éteignirent	Spensi	spugnesti	spuse	spuggemmo	spugneste	spusero
Éteindrai	éteindras	éteindra	éteindrons	éteindrez	éteindront						
Éteindrais	éteindrais	éteindrait	éteindrons	éteindriez	éteindraient						
		Imperative.									
	éteins	éteigne	éteignons	éteignez!	éteignent		spugni	spenga	spugniamo	spugnete	{ spugnano, spengano
		Subjunctive Present.									
Éteigne	éteignes	éteigne	éteignions	éteigniez	éteignent	Spenga } Spugna }	spugna	spugna	spugniamo	spugniate	{ spugnano, spengano
Éteignisse	éteignisses	éteignit	éteignissions	éteignissiez	éteignissent						

## Fall.

## Tomber—Regular.

{	Cadere.	Infinitive.	Caduto.
	Cadendo.		
	Cadde	Preterite.	
	cademmo		

Future.

Caddi	cadesti	Caderò } &c.	cadeste	caddero
-------	---------	--------------	---------	---------

## Extinguish.

## SPANISH.

Infinitive.

Extinguir, or Apagar.

## PORTUGUESE.

Infinitive.

Extinguir.

The irregularity consists in the general rule, viz. :—  
 Verbs ending in *guir* drop the *u* before *a* or *o*.  
 " " " *gar* add *u* before *e*.

The irregularity consists in the general rule, viz. :—  
 Verbs ending in *guir* drop the *u* before *a* or *o*.

## Fall.

	Caer.	Infinitive. Cayendo.	Caido.		Cahir.	Infinitive. Cahindo.	Cahido.	
Caigo	caes	Indicative Present. cae caemos	caéis	caen	Cayo*	cahes	Indicative Present. cahe cahimos	cahis cahem
Caf	caiste	Preterite. cayó caímos	caísteis	cayéron				

\* It is also written *caio*, *caia*, &c.

## VERBS.

Fall—continued.

## FRENCH.

Tomber—Regular.

ITALIAN.  
Conditional.{ Cadrei,  
Caderei, } &c.

## Feel.

	Sentir.	Infinitive. Sentant.		Senti.	{
Sens	sens	Indicative Present. sent sentons		sentez sentent	
Sentais	sentais	Imperfect. sentait sentions		sentiez sentaient	
Sentis	sentis	Preterite. sentit sentimes		sentites sentirent	
Sentirai	sentiras	Future. sentira sentirons		sentirez sentiront	
Sentirais	sentirais	Conditional. sentirait sentirions		sentiriez sentirraient	
	sens	Imperative. sente sentons		sentez sentent	
Sente	sentes	Subjunctive Present. sente sentions		sentiez sentent	
Sentisse	sentisses	Imperfect. sentit sentissions		sentissiez sentissent	

Sentire—Regular.

Fall—continued.

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

			Imperative.							
	cae	caiga	caigamos	caed	caigan					
			Subjunctive Present.							
Caiga	caigas	caiga	caigamos	caigais	caigan	Caya	cayas	caya	cayamos	cayais
			Imperfect.							
Cayera	cayeras	cayera	cayéramos	cayérais	cayeran					
Cayese	cayeses	cayese	cayésemos	cayéseis	cayesen					
			Future.							
Cayere	cayeres	cayere	cayéremos	cayéreis	cayeren					

## Feel.

			Infinitive.							
	Sentir.		Sintiendo.							
			Indicative Present.							
Siento	sientes	siente	sentimos	sentis	sienten	Sinto	sentis	sente	sentimos	Sentido.
			Preterite.							
Sentí	sentiste	sintió	sentimos	sentisteis	sintiéron					

			Imperative.							
	siente	sienta	sintamos	sentid	sientan					
			Subjunctive Present.							
Sienta	sientas	sienta	sintamos	sintais	sientan	Sinta	sintas	sinta	sintamos	sintais
			Imperfect.							
Sintiera	sintieras	sintiera	sintieramos	sintierais	sintieran					
Sintiese	sintieses	sintiese	sintiésemos	sintieseis	sintiesen					
			Future.							
Sintiere	sintieres	sintiere	sintiéremos	sintiereis	sintieren					

FRENCH.			Flee.			ITALIAN.		
Infinitive. Fuyant.			Fui.			Infinitive. Fuggendo.		
Indicative Present. fuit			Fui.			Indicative Present. Fuggo, &c.		
Fuis	fuis	fuit	fuyons	fuyez	fuent	Fuggo, &c.		
Fuyais	fuyais	fuyait	fuyions	fuyiez	fuyaient			
Fuis	fuis	fuit	fuimes	fustes	furent			
Fuirai	fuiras	fuirà	fuirons	fuirez	fuiront			
Fuirais	fuirais	fuirait	fuirions	fuiriez	fuiralent			
			Imperative. fuis	fuez	fuent	fuggi, &c.	Imperative.	
Fuie	fuies	fui	fuyions	fuyiez	fuent	Fugga, &c.	Subjunctive Present.	
Fuisse	fuisses	fuit	fuissions	fuissiez	fuissent			

## Gather.

Cueillir.			Cueilli.			Cogliere.			Colto.		
Infinitive. Cueillant.			Cogliendo.			Indicative Present.			Coglione.		
Cueille	cueilles	cueille	cueillons	cueillez	cueillent	Colgo Coglio	} cogli	coglie	cogliamo	cogliete	{ colgono coglione
Cueillais	cueillais	cueillait	cueillions	cueilliez	cueillaient	Coglieva, &c.					Imperfect.
Cueillis	cueillis	cueillit	cueillfmes	cueillites	cueillirent	Colsi	cogliesti	colse	cogliemmo	coglieste	colsero
Cueillerai	cueilleras	cueillera	cueillerons	cueillerez	cueilleront	Coglierò, &c.					Future.
Cueillerais	cueillerais	cueillerait	cueillerions	cueillerez	cueilleraint	Coglierei, &c.					Conditional.
		cueille	cueillons	cueillez	cueillent		cogli	colga	coglamo	cogliete	colgano
Cueille	cueilles	cueille	cueillions	cueilliez	cueillent	Colga	colga	colga	coglamo	cogliate	colgano
Cueillisse	cueillisses	cueillit	cueillissions	cueillissiez	cueillissent	Cogliessi, &c.					Imperfect.

## VERBS.

203

	SPANISH.				Flee.				PORTUGUESE.			
	Infinitive. Huyendo.		Huido.		Fugir.		Infinitive. Fugindo.		Indicative Present.		Fugido.	
Huir.	huye	huyendo.	huios	huyen	Fujo	foges	foge	fugimos	fugis	fogem		
Huyo	huyes	huyendo.	huios	huyen	Fujo	foges	foge	fugimos	fugis	fogem		
Huf	huiste	huyó	Preterite. huimos	huisteis	huyeron							

	Imperative.				Gather.							
	huya	huya	huyámos	huyamos	huid	huyan	foge	fuja	fuja	fujamos	fugl	fujão
	Subjunctive Present.	huya	huyamos	huyamos	huyais	huyan	Fuja	fujas	fujas	fujamos	fujais	fujão
Huya	huyas	huya	huyamos	huyamos	huyais	huyan	Fuja	fujas	fujas	fujamos	fujais	fujão
Huyera	huyeras	huyera	huyéramos	huyéramos	huyerais	huyeran						
Huyese	huyeses	huyese	huyesemos	huyesemos	huyeseis	huyesen						
Huyere	huyeres	huyere	huyeremos	huyeremos	huyereis	huyeren						

Colegit—Like Elegir, To Choose.

Colhêr—Regular.

## VERBS.

Give.

## FRENCH.

## Donner—Regular.

	Dare,	ITALIAN.		
Do	dai	dà	Infinitive. Dando.	Dato.
Detti Diedi	} desti	{detto {diede	Indicative Present. Preterite. Future.	date danno {dettero {diedero
Darò, &c.			Conditional.	
Darei, &c.		dà	Imperative. Subjunctive Present.	date diano
Dia	dia	dia dia	Imperfect.	diate diano
Dessi	dessi	desse	dessimo	deste dessero

Go.

## Aller,

Infinitive.  
Allant.

## Alle,

## Andare.

Infinitive.  
Andando.

## Andato.

Vais	vas	va	Indicative Present. allons	allez	vont	Vo, or vado, vai	va	Indicative Present. andiamo	andate	vanno
Allais	allais	allait	Imperfect. allions	alliez	allaient					
Allai	allas	alla	Preterite. allâmes	allâtes	allèrent					
Irai	iras	ira	Future. irons	irez	iront	Andrà, &c.		Future.		
Irais	irais	irait	Conditional. irions	iriez	iraien	Andreï, &c.		Conditional.		

# VERBS.

205

## Give.

### SPANISH.

Infinitive.  
Dando.

Dar.  
Indicative Present.

da  
damos

Preterite.  
dímos

Dado.

dais

dan

Doy das

dió  
dím̄os

dísteis

dieron

Dí diste

dai  
dámos

Preterite.  
demos

### PORTUGUESE.

Infinitive.  
Dando.

Dar.  
Indicative Present.

dá  
damos

Dou dás

Preterite.  
demos

Dei deste

deo, or deu  
demos

Dí destes

dai  
dão

derão

Diera dieras  
Diese dieses

diera  
diese

Imperfect.  
diéramos  
diésemos

Future.  
dieremos

diérais  
diéseis

dieran  
diesen

Der  
deres

dierais  
dieren

dá  
dê

Subjunctive Present.  
demos

Dê dês

Imperfect.  
deras  
desse

Future.  
dermos

Imperative.  
demos

dai

dêm

deis

dêem

Diere dieres

diere

vamos

Imperfect.  
vimos

Preterite.  
fumos

Future.  
faremos

Conditional.  
friamos

vâis

van

fâis

fan

anduvisteis

anduvieron

fueron

## Go.

Andar.  
Ir.

Infinitive.  
Andando.  
yendo.

Andado.  
ido.

Andar (regr.) Ir.

Infinitive.  
Indo.

Ido.

Voy vas

va  
vâmos

vâis

van

Vou vais

vai  
vâmos

ides

vão

Iba ibas

iba  
fbamos

fbais

fan

Anduve  
Fui  
fuiste

andúvoo  
fué

Preterite.  
anduvímos  
fuimos

anduvísteis

anduvieron

fueron

Fui  
foste

foi  
fomos

festes

fôrão

Iré iras

irá  
irémos

ireis

iran

Iria irias

iria  
iriâmos

iriaias

irian

## VERBS.

## Go—continued.

		FRENCH.						ITALIAN.			
		Imperative.						Imperative.			
	va	aille	allons	allez	aillettent		va	vada	andiamo	andate	vadano
Aille	ailles	aille	allions	alliez	aillettent	Vada	vada	vada	andiamo	andiate	vadano
Allasse	allasses	allât	allassions	allassiez	allassent						

## Go out.

		Infinitive. Sortant.		Sorti.		Sortire, Regular. Uscire.		Infinitive. Uscendo.		Uscito.	
Sors	sors	sort	sortons	sortez	sortent	Esco	esci	esce	usciamo	uscite	escono
Sortais	sortais	sortait	sortions	sortiez	sortaient						
Sortis	sortis	sortit	sortîmes	sortîtes	sortirent						
Sortirai	sortiras	sortira	sortirons	sortirez	sortiront						
Sortirais	sortirais	sortirait	sortirions	sortiriez	sortiraient						
	sors	sorte	sortons	sortez	sortent		esci	esca	usciamo	uscite	escano
Sorte	sortes	sorte	sortions	sortiez	sortent	Esca	esca	esca	usciamo	usciate	escano
Sortisse	sortisses	sortit	sortissions	sortissiez	sortissent						

## Go—continued.

SPANISH.								PORTUGUESE.			
		Imperative.						Imperative.			
Vaya	vé	vaya	vámos	id	vayan	vai	vá	vamos	ide	vão	
			Subjunctive Present.				vá	Subjunctive Present.			
Vaya	vayas	vaya	váyamos	váyais	váyan	Vá	vás	vamos	vades	vão	
			Imperfect.				vá	Subjunctive Present.			
Anduviera	anduvieras	anduviera	anduvíramos	anduvíerais	anduvieran	Fora	foras	fora	forais	forão	
Fuera	fueras	fuera	fuéramos	fuerais	fueran			foram			
Anduviese	anduvieses	anduviese	anduvísemos	anduvíeis	anduviesen	Fosse	fosses	fosse	fosseis	fossem	
Fuese	fuseses	fuese	fuésemos	fuéseis	fuesen			fossemos			
			Future.								
Anduviere	anduvieres	anduviere	anduvíremos	anduviereis	anduvieren	För	fores	för	fordes	forem	
Fuere	fueres	fuere	fuéremos	fuereis	fueren			formos			

## Go out.

Infinitive.				Sahir.				Infinitive.			
Salir.		Saliendo.		Salido.		Sahir.		Sahindo.		Sahido.	
Salgo	sales	Indicative Present.	sale salimos	salis	salen	Saio *	sae	Indicative Present.	sae saimos	sais	sáem
		sale	salimos	salis	salen		sae	saimos	sais	sáem	
Saldré	saldras	Future.	saldrá saldrémos	saldréis	saldrán						
Saldria	saldrias	Conditional.	saldria saldríamos	saldriais	saldrían						
	sal	Imperative.	salga salgámos	salíd	sálgan						
Salga	salgas	Subjunctive Present.	salga salgámos	salgaís	sálgan	Saia *	saias	Subjunctive Present.	saias saímos	saiais	saião
		salga	salgámos	salgaís	sálgan			saias	saiamos	saiais	saião

\* It is also written Sayo, saya, &amp;c.

## VERBS.

## Hate.

## FRENCH.

Haïr.		Haïssant.		Haï.	
Indicative Present.					
Hais	hais	hait	haïssons	haïssez	haïssent
Haïssais	haïssais	haïssait	haïssions	haïssiez	haïssaient
Haïs	hais	haït	haïmes	haïtes	haïrent
Haïrai	haïras	haïra	haïrons	haïrez	haïront
Haïrais	haïrais	haïrait	haïrions	haïriez	haïraient
	hais	haïsse	haïssons	haïssez	haïssent
Haïsse	haïssez	haïsse	haïssions	haïssiez	haïssent
Haïsse	haïssez	haït	haïssions	haïssiez	haïssent

## ITALIAN.

Odiare is regular, with the exception that the second person singular of the present indicative takes the double *i*, as, *tu odii*; other verbs ending in *iare* taking only one, as, *tu pigli*.

## Hold.

## Infinitive.

Tenir.		Tenu.		Tenere.		Tenuto.	
Tenant.							
Tiens	tiens	tient	tenons	tenez	tiennent	Tengo	tieni
Tenais	tenais	tenait	tenions	teniez	tenaient	tiene	teniamo
Tins	tins	tint	timmes	tîntes	tinrent	Tenni	tenesti
Tiendrai	tiendras	tiendra	tiendrons	tiendrez	tiendront	Terrò, &c.	Preterite.
Tiendrais	tiendrais	tiendrait	tiendrions	tiendriez	tiendraient	Terrei, &c.	Conditional.
	tiens	tienne	tenons	tenez	tiennent		Imperative.
Tienne	tiennes	tienne	tenions	teniez	tiennent	Tenga	tenga
Tinssse	tinssses	tint	tinssions	tinssiez	tinsssent		Subjunctive Present, Imperfect.

## Hate.

SPANISH.

Odiar and Detestar both regular.

Aborrecer follows the general rule of irregularity, viz., verbs ending in *ecer* add a *z* before the *e*, followed by *a* or *o*; as, aborrezco in the present indicative.

PORTUGUESE.

Odiar and Aborrecer—Regular.

Except that the latter, like all verbs in *cer*, makes the *c* soft before *o* and *a*, by the accent, as *ç*.

## Hold.

Tener, to hold, is another form of the verb To have, and is conjugated, page 151.

Ter, and Pegar.

Peguei

Pegue

Infinitive.  
Pegando.

pegou

pegue

pegamos

pegueis

Pegado.

pegastes

peguem

pegáramo

pegastes

peguem

pegáramo

pegueis

peguem

pegáramo

pegueis

peguem

pegáramo

## VERBS.

## Know.

## FRENCH.

	Savoir.										
			Infinitive. Sachant.		Su.			Sapere.			
Sais	sais	sait	savons	savez	savent	So	sai	sa	sappiamo	sapete	sanno
Savais	savais	savait	Imperfect. savions	saviez	savaient						
Sus	sus	sut	Preterite. sûmes	sûtes	surent	Seppi	sapesti	seppe	Preterite. sapemmo	sapeste	seppero
Saurai	sauras	saura	Future. saurons	saurez	sauront	Saprò, &c.			Future.		
Saurais	saurais	saurait	Conditional. saurions	sauriez	sauraint	Saprei, &c.			Conditional.		
		sache	Imperative. sache	sachez	sachent		sappi	sappia	Imperative.		
Sache	saches	sache	Subjunctive Present. sachions	sachiez	sachent	Sappia	sappia	sappiamo	Subjunctive Present.	sappiate	sappiano
Susse	susses	sût	Imperfect. sussions	sussiez	sussent			sappiamo	sappiamo	sappiate	sappiano

## Know.

## Infinitive.

## Connaissant.

## Indicative Present.

	Connaitre.										
			Infinitive. Connaissant.		Connu.			Conoscere.		Infinitive. Conoscendo.	
Connais	connais	connaît	connaissons	connaissez	connaiscent			Conobbi		Conosceri.	
			Imperfect.								
Connaissais	connaissais	connaissait	connaissions	connaissiez	connaissaient						
			Preterite.								
Connus	connus	connut	connûmes	connûtes	connurent						
			Future.								
Connaîtrai	connaîtras	connaîtra	connaîtrons	connaîtrez	connaîtront						
			Conditional.								
Connaîtrais	connaîtrais	connaîtrait	connaîtrions	connaîtriez	connaîtraient						
			Imperative								
		connais	connaisse	connaissons	connaissez	connaiscent					
			Subjunctive Present.								
Connaisse	connaisse	connaisse	connaissons	connaissez	connaiscent						
			Imperfect.								
Connusse	connusse	connût	connussions	connussiez	connussent						

# VERBS.

214

## Know.

		SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE.			
		Infinitive. Sabiendo.		Sabido.		Saber.		Infinitive. Sabendo.	
Sé	sabes	sabe	sabemos	sabeis	saben	Sei	sabes	sabe	sabemos
Supo	supiste	supo	Preterite. Future.	supimos	supísteis	supieron	Sube Soube	{ soubeste	Preterite.
Sabré	sabras	sabrá	Conditional.	sabrémos	sabreis	sabran		soube	soubemos
Sabria	sabrias	sabria	Imperative.	sabrfamos	sabrfais	sabrfan			
Sepa	sepas	sepa	Subjunctive Present.	sepámos	sabed	sépan	Saiba	sabe	Imperative.
Supiera	supieras	supiera	Imperfect.	supiéramos	supiérais	supieran	Soubera Soubesse	saiba	Subjunctive Present.
Supiese	supieses	supiese	Future.	supiésemos	supiéseis	supiesen		saibas	sabemos
Supiere	supieres	supiere		supiéremos	supiéreis	supieren	Souber	souber	Imperfect.
								souberes	soubermos
								souber	souberdes
									souberem

## Know.

Conocer—Like Nacer, to be born, and all verbs ending in *cer*, which change the *c* into *z* before *o* and *a*.

Conhecer—Regular.

## VERBS.

	FRENCH.				Laugh.				ITALIAN.			
	Rire.	Infinitive. Riant.		Ri (no fem.)	Ridere.		Infinitive. Ridendo.		Riso.			
Ris	ris	rit	rions	riez	rient							
Rialis	riais	riaît	Imperfect. riions	riiez	riaint							
Ris	ris	rit	Preterite. rimes	rites	rinent	Risi	ridesti	rise	Preterite. ridemmo	rideste	risero	
Rirai	riras	rira	Future. rions	rirez	riront							
Rirais	riraïs	rirait	Conditional. ririons	ririez	riraient							
	ris	rie	Imperative. rions	riez	rient							
Rie	ries	rie	Subjunctive Present. riions	riiez	rinent							
Risse	risses	rít	Imperfect. rissions	rissiez	rissent							

	Live.				Vivere.				Infinitive. Vivendo.			
	Vivre.	Infinitive. Vivant.		Vécu (no fem.)	Vivere.		Vivendo.		Vivuto, or Vissuto.			
Vis	vis	vit	vivons	vivez	vivent							
Vivais	vivais	vivait	Imperfect. vivions	viviez	vivaient							
Vécus	vécus	vécut	Preterite. vécumes	vécûtes	vécurent	Vissi	vivesti	visse	Preterite. vivemmo	viveste	vissero	
Vivrai	vivras	vivra	Future. vivrons	vivrez	vivront	{ Vivrò, Viverò, &c.						
Vivrais	vivrais	vivrait	Conditional. vivirons	vivriez	vivraient	{ Vivrei, Viverei, &c.			Conditional.			
	vis	vive	Imperative. vivons	vivez	vivent							
Vive	vives	vive	Subjunctive Present. vivions	viviez	vivent							
Vécusse	vécusse	vécût	Imperfect. vécussions	vécussiez	vécussent							

## VERBS.

213

## SPANISH.

## Infinitive.

Riendo, or Riyendo.

## Indicative Present.

Reir.					
Kio	ries	rie	reimos	reis	reido.

## Laugh.

## PORTUGUESE.

Ref	reiste	{ rido riyo.	{ reimos } reisteis	{ rieron riyeron	

Rir—Regular.

## Imperative.

## Subjunctive Present.

## Imperfect.

## Future.

Ria	rie	ria	riamos	reid	rian
Riera	rias	ria	riamos	riais	rian
Riesel	reras	riera	riéramos	riérais	rieran
Riere	rieses	riese	riésemos	riéseis	riesen

## Future.

## Live.

Vivir—Regular.

Viver—Regular.

## VERBS.

Move.									
FRENCH.					ITALIAN.				
Mouvoir.		Infinitive. Mouvant.			Mu.	Muovere, or Movere.		Infinitive. Movendo.	
Meus	meus	meut	mouvous	mouvez	meuvent	Muovo	muovi	muove	moviamo
Mouvais	mouvais	mouvait	mouvions	mouviez	mouvaient	Moveva, &c.			movetevi
Mus	mus	mut	mûmes	mûtes	murent	Mossi	movesti	mosse	movemmo
Mouvrai	mouvras	mouvrâ	mouvrons	mouvrez	mouvront	Moverò, &c.			moveste
Mouvrais	mouvrais	mouvrâit	mouvrons	mouvriez	mouvrâent	Moverei, &c.			mossero
	meus	meuve	mouvons	mouvez	meuvent		muovi	muova	muoviamo
Meuve	meuves	meuve	mouvions	mouviez	meuvent	Muova	muova	mouva	movetevi
Musse	musses	mut	mussions	mussiez	mussent	Movessi, &c.			muovano

Open.									
Infinitive. Ouvrant.					Infinitive, Aprendo.				
Ouvrir.		Indicative Present. Ouvrant.			Ouvert.	Aprire.		Indicative Present.	
Ouvre	ouvres	ouvre	ouvrons	ouvrez	ouvrent	Apro, &c.			Aperto.
Ouvrais	ouvrais	ouvrâit	ouvrions	ouvriez	ouvraient				
Ouvris	ouvris	ouvrît	ouvrîmes	ouvrîtes	ouvrîrent	{ Apri Apersi } apristi			
Ouvrirai	ouvriras	ouvrira	ouvrîrons	ouvrîrez	ouvrîront				
Ouvrirais	ouvrirais	ouvrîrait	ouvrîrons	ouvrîez	ouvrîraient				
	ouvre	ouvre	ouvrons	ouvrez	ouvrent				
Ouvre	ouvres	ouvre	ouvrons	ouvriez	ouvrent	apri, &c.			
Ouvrisse	ouvrisse	ouvrît	ouvrissions	ouvrissiez	ouvrissent	Apra, &c.			

## Move.

## SPANISH.

Infinitive.

Moviendo.

Mover.

Movido.

Indicative Present.

Muevo

mueves

mueve

moveis

mueven

## PORTUGUESE.

Mover—Regular.

Imperative.

mueve

mueva

moved

muevas

movamos

moevan

Subjunctive Present.

mueva

movamos

movals

moevan

## Open.

Abrir—Regular, except Participle, *Abierto*.Abrir—Regular, except Past Participle, *Aberto*.

Please,

FRENCH.								ITALIAN.			
Plaire.		Infinitive. Plaisant.		Plu.		Piacere.		Infinitive. Piacendo.		Piaciuto.	
Plais	plais	plait	plaïsons	plaïsez	plaïsent	Piaccio	piaci	piace	piacciamo	piacete	piacciono
Plaisais	plaisais	plaisait	plaïsons	plaïsez	plaïsaient						
Plus	plus	plut	plaïmes	plaïtes	plurent	Piacqui	piaciesti	piacque	piacemmo	piaceste	piacquero
Plairai	plairas	plaira	plaïrons	plaïrez	plaïront						
Plairais	plairais	plairait	plaïrions	plaïriez	plaïraient						
Plaise	plais	plaise	plaïsons	plaïsez	plaïsent	piaci	piaccia	piaccia	piacciamo	piacete	piacciano
Plusse	plusses	plût	plussions	plussiez	plussent	Piaccia	piaccia	piaccia	piacciamo	piacciate	piacciano

Put.

Mettre.	Infinitive. Mettant.			Mis.	Mettere. Also, Porre or Ponere.	Past part.—messo. Ponendo.	Infinitive. Preterite—misi, mise, misero.				
	mets	met	mettons				Pongo	poni	pone	poniamo	ponete
Mettais	mettais	mettait	mettions	mettiez	mettaient	Poneva, &c.	Indicative Present. Imperfect.				
Mis	mis	mit	mîmes	mîtes	mirent	Posi	ponesti	pose	ponemmo	poneste	posero
Mettrai	mettras	mettra	mettrons	mettrez	mettront	Porrà, &c.	Future.				

## VERBS.

217

Please.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

Agradar—Regular.  
Placer—Verb impersonal.

Agradar and Gostar—Regular.



Put.

	Poner.	Infinitive. Poniendo.				Puesto.		Pôr.	Infinitive. Pondo.				Posto.
Pongo	pones	Indicative Present. pone	ponemos	poneis	ponen		Ponho	pões	Indicative Present. põe	ponemos	pondes	põem	
Puse	pusiste	Preterite. puso	pusimos	pusísteis	pusieron		Punha	punhas	Imperfect. punha	punhamos	punheis	punhão	
Pondré	pondras	Future. pondrá	pondrémos	pondreis	pondran		Puz	{pozeste {puzeste}	Preterite. poz	{pozemos {puzemos}	pozeses	pozerão puzerão	



# VERBS.

219

## Put—continued.

### SPANISH.

Conditional.

Imperative.

Subjunctive Present.

Imperfect.

Future.

Pondria	pondrias	pondria	pondrámos	pondrás	pondrian				
	pon	ponga	pongámos	poned	pongan	põe	Imperative.		
Ponga	pongás	pongá	pongamos	pongais	pongán	Ponha	ponhas	ponha	ponhamos
Pusiera	pusieras	pusiera	pusiéramos	pusiérais	pusieran	Pozera Puzera	{ pozeras	pozera	pozaremos
Pusiese	pusieses	pusiese	pusiésemos	pusiéseis	pusiesen	Pozesse Puzesse	{ pozesses	pozesse	pozessemos
Pusiere	pusieres	pusiere	pusiéremos	pusíreis	pusieren	Puzer Poser	{ puzeres	puzer	puzermos

### PORTUGUESE.

Subjunctive Present.

Imperfect.

Future.

						ponha	ponhamos	ponde	ponhão
Ponga	pongas	pongá	pongamos	pongais	pongán	Ponha	ponhas	ponha	ponhão
Pusiera	pusieras	pusiera	pusiéramos	pusiérais	pusieran	Pozera Puzera	{ pozeras	pozera	pozaremos
Pusiese	pusieses	pusiese	pusiésemos	pusiéseis	pusiesen	Pozesse Puzesse	{ pozesses	pozesse	pozessemos
Pusiere	pusieres	pusiere	pusiéremos	pusíreis	pusieren	Puzer Poser	{ puzeres	puzer	puzermos

### Read.

Infinitive.

Leyendo.

Leido.

Leer.

Ler.

Infinitive.

Lendo.

Indicative Present.

Lido.

Leio  
Leyo

lê  
lemos

{ leis  
ledes

lêm

Preterite.

lefímos

lefstels

leyeron

Lef

leiste

leyó

lês

lê

{ leis  
ledes

lêm

Imperfect.

leyéramos

leyérais

leyeran

Leyera

leyeras

leyera

leyésemos

leyéseis

leia

Imperative.

leyímos

leiamos

lede

Leyese

leyeses

leyese

leyésemos

leyesen

Leia

leyísemos

leiai

leiðo

Leyere

leyeres

leyere

Future

leyeremos

leyereis

leyeren

leias

leyísemos

leiai

leiðo

## VERBS.

## Run.

FRENCH.				ITALIAN.			
Courir.		'Infinitive.]		Corru.		Correre.	
Courant.		Indicative Present.		Couru.		Correndo.	
Cours	cours	court	courons	courez	courent		
Courais	courais	courait	courions	couriez	couraient		
Courus	courus	courut	courâmes	courûtes	coururent	Corsi	corresti
Courrai	courras	courra	courrons	courrez	courront		corse
Courrais	courrais	courrait	courrions	courriez	courraient		Preterite.
	cours	coure	courons	courez	courent		corremmo
Coure	coures	coure	courions	couriez	courent		correste
Courusse	courusses	courût	Imperfect. courussions	courussiez	courussent		corsero

## Say.

Infinitive. Disant.				Dir.				Infinitive. Dicendo.				Detto.	
Dis	dis	dit	Indicative Present. disons	dites	[disent	Dico	dici, or di'	Indicative Present. dice	diciamo		dite	dicono	
Disais	disais	disait	Imperfect. disions	disiez	disaient	Diceva, &c.		Imperfect.					
Dis	dls	dit	Preterite. dimes	dîtes	dirent	Dissi	dicesti	Preterite. disse	dicemmo	diceste	dissero		
Dirai	diras	dira	Future. dirons	diriez	diront	Dirò, &c.		Future.					
Dirais	dirais	dirait	Conditional. dirions	diriez	diraient	Dirai, &c.		Conditional.					

## VERBS.

221

## Run.

SPANISH.

Correr—Regular.

PORTUGUESE.

Correr—Regular.



## Say.

Decir.		Infinitive. Diciendo.		Dicho.		Dizer.		Infinitive. Dizendo.		Dito, or Ditto.	
		Indicative Present.	decimos	decis	dícen	Digo	dizes	diz	Indicative Present.	dizeis	dizem
Digo	dices	dice	decimos	decis	dícen	Digo	dizes	diz	dizemos	dizeis	dizem
Dije	dijiste	dijo	Preterite. dijimos	dijisteis	dijeron	Disse	disseste	disse	Preterite. dissemos	dissestes	dissero
Diré	diras	dirá	Future. diremos	direis	diran	Drei	dirás	dirá	Future. diremos	dirais	dirão
Diria	dirias	diria	Conditional. diríamos	diriais	dirian	Diria	dirias	diria	Conditional. diríamos	dirieis	dirião

## VERBS.

Say—continued.

	FRENCH.						ITALIAN.			
	Imperative.						Imperative.			
	dis	dise	disons	dites	disent		di'		dica	diciamo
Dise	dises	dise	Subjunctive Present. disions	disiez	disent	Dica	dica	Subjunctive Present. diciamo	dite	dicano
Disse	disses	dit	Imperfect. dissions	dissiez	dissent	Dicessi, &c.		Imperfect.	diciate	dicano

See.

	Infinitive. Voyant.			Vu.	Vedere.			Infinitive. Vedendo.			Veduto, or Visto.	
Vois	vois	voit	Indicative Present. voyons	voyez	voient	Vedo Veggo	}	vedi	vede	vediamo	vedete	vedono
Voyais	voyais	voyait	Imperfect. voyions	voyiez	voyaient				Indicative Present.			
Vis	vis	vit	Preterite. vimes	vites	virent	Vidi		vedesti	vide	vedemmo	vedeste	videro
Verrai	verras	verra	Future. verrons	verrez	verront	Vedrò, &c.			Preterite. vedemmo			
Verrais	verrais	v verrait	Conditional. verrions	verriez	verraient	Vedrei, &c.			Future.			
	vois	voie	Imperative. voyons	voyez	voient			vedi	veda	Imperative. vediamo	vedete	vedano
Vole	voies	voie	Subjunctive Present. voyions	voyiez	voient	Veda		veda	veda	Subjunctive Present. vediamo	vediate	vedano
Visse	visses	vit	Imperfect. vissions	vissiez	vissent							

## Say—continued.

## SPANISH.

Imperative.  
digámosSubjunctive Present.  
diga digámosImperfect.  
dijera dijéramosFuture.  
dijere dijeremos

di

diga

dígas

diga

dijeras

dijera

dijese

dijese

dijeres

dijere

decid

digais

dijerais

dijesen

dijereis

dígan

dígan

Diga

dijeran

dijerent

dize

digas

Dissera

Disseresse

Disseres

diga

digamos

Subjunctive Present.  
diga digamos

dissere

dissesse

dissereis

dissereis

dissereis

dissesseis

dissesseis

## PORTUGUESE.

Imperative.  
digamosSubjunctive Present.  
diga digamosImperfect.  
dissere dissereisFuture.  
dissereis dissereis

dissereis dissereis

dizei

digais

dissereis

dissesseis

dissesseis

digão

dissereis

dissereis

dissesseis

dissesseis

## See.

Infinitive.  
Viendo.Indicative Present.  
vemosSubjunctive Present.  
veámosImperfect.  
vefámosFuture.  
vefimos

Ver.

ves

ve

veias

veia

vefais

veian

Visto.

ven

veis

Vi

viste

vio

Ver.

vês

Vejo

vê

vistes

virão

Infinitive.  
Vendo.Indicative Present.  
vemosSubjunctive Present.  
vejamosImperfect.  
vejámosFuture.  
vejimos

Visto.

{veis  
vedes{vês  
vêmImperative.  
veámosSubjunctive Present.  
veámosFuture.  
vefimos

ve

vea

véas

vea

veáis

veáis

veis

veis

ved

véan

veáis

véan

véd

vén

vejas

Vira

Visse

vê

veja

veja

vira

visse

vires

vir

vir

virmos

virdes

Imperative.  
vejamosSubjunctive Present.  
vejamosImperfect.  
virámosFuture.  
virmos

vêde

vejais

vireis

vireis

vireis

vejão

vejais

virão

vissem

vissem

## VERBS.

## Sleep.

## FRENCH.

## Infinitive.

## Dormant.

## Indicative Present.

## Imperfect.

## Preterite.

## Future.

## Conditional.

## Imperative.

## Subjunctive Present.

## Imperfect.

Dormir.

Dors

Dormais

Dormis

Dormirai

Dormirais

Dorme

Dormisse

dort

dormons

dormait

dormions

dormit

dormîmes

dormira

dormirons

dormirait

dormirions

dors

dormons

dorme

dormions

dormît

dormissions

Dormi.

dormez

dormiez

dormîtes

dormirez

dormiriez

dormez

dormiez

dormissiez

## Sleep.

## ITALIAN.

Dormire—Regular.

{

}

## Sit.

## Infinitive.

## Asséyant.

## Indicative Present.

## Imperfect.

## Preterite.

## Future.

Asseoir.

Assieds

Asséyais

Assis

Assiérai

assied

asséyait

assis

assiéra

asséyons

asséyions

assîmes

assiérons

Assis.

asséyez

asséyiez

assîtes

asséyent

asséyaient

assirent

assiérez

assiéront

Sedere.

Siedo }

Seggo }

siedi

Infinitive.  
Sedendo.

## Indicative present.

siede

sediamo

sedete

Seduto.

{siedono

{seggono

Future.

## Sleep.

## SPANISH.

## Infinitive.

Durmiendo.

Dormido.

## PORTUGUESE.

## Infinitive.

Dormindo.

Dormido.

Dormir.

## Indicative Present.

Duermo duermes duerme dormimos

dormis duermen

Dormir.

## Indicative Present.

Durmo dormes dorme

dormimos dormais dormem

## Preterite.

Dormí dormiste durmió dormimos

dormisteis durmieron

## Imperative.

duerme duerma durmámos

Subjunctive Present.

Duerma duermas duerma durmamos

## Imperfect.

Durmiera durmieras durmiera durmiéramos

Durmiese durmiéses durmiese durmiésemos

## Future.

Durmiere durmieres durmiere durmieremos

## Subjunctive Present.

durma durmamos durmais durmão

## Sit.

## Infinitive.

Sentando.

Sentado.

Sentar. Sientas sienta sentamos

Indicative Present.

sentais sientan

}

Assentar—Regular.

## VERBS.

## Sit—continued.

FRENCH.								ITALIAN.			
Conditional.								Conditional			
Assiérais	assiérais	assiérait	assiérons	assiériez	assiéraient	Sedrei	{ &c.	Imperative.	{ siedi	{ sedano	{ siedano
	assieds	asséye	asséyons	asséyez	asséyent	Sederei					
Asséye	asséyes	asséye	asséyions	asséyez	asséyent	Sieda	{ sieda	Subjunctive present.	siede	sedete	{ seggano
	assisses	assit	assissions	assissiez	assissent	Segga					

## Take.

Prendre.				Infinitive. Prenant.		Pris.		Prendere.		Infinitive. Prendendo.		Preso.
Prends	prends	prend	prendons	prenez	prennent							
Prenais	prenais	prenait	prenions	preniez	prenaient							
Pris	pris	prit	primés	prîtes	prirent	Presi	prendesti	prese	Preterite.	prendemmo	prendeste	presco
Prendrai	prendras	prendra	prendrons	prendrez	prendront							
Prendrais	prendrais	prendrait	prendrions	prendriez	prendraient							
	prends	prenne	prenons	prenez	prennent							
Prenne	prennes	prenne	prenions	preniez	prennent							
Prisse	prisses	prit	prissions	prissiez	prissent							

## Sit—continued.

SPANISH.

		Imperative.		
	sienta	siente	sentemos	sentad
Siente	sientes	siente	sentemos	senteis



PORTUGUESE.

Assentar—Regular.

## Take.

Prender and Tomar—Both Regular.

Prender and Tomar—Regular.



## VERBS.

## Wish, or be Willing.

FRENCH.				ITALIAN.			
Vouloir.		Infinitive. Voulant.		Voulu.		Volere.	
Veux	veux	veut	voulons	voulez	veulent	Voglio	vuoi
Voulais	voulais	voulait	voulions	voulez	voulaient		
Voulus	voulus	voulut	voulûmes	voulûtes	voulurent	Volli	volesti
Voudrai	voudras	voudra	voudrons	voudrez	voudront	Vorrò, &c.	
Voudrais	voudrais	voudrait	voudrions	voudriez	voudraient	Vorrei, &c.	Conditional.
		Imperative.		veuillez			
Veuille	veuilles	veuille	voulions	voulez	veuillent	Voglia	voglia
Voulusse	voulusses	voulût	voulussions	voulussiez	voulussent		

## Worth.

Valoir.				Infinitive. Valant.				Infinitive. Valendo.				Valuto and Valso.	
Valoir.		Infinitive. Valant.		Valu.		Valere.		Infinitive. Valendo.		Valuto and Valso.		Valuto and Valso.	
Vaux	vaux	vaut	valons	valez	valent	Valgo Vaglio }	vali	vale	valiamo	valete	{ valgono vagliano		
Valais	valais	valait	valions	valiez	valaient								
Valus	valus	valut	valûmes	valûtes	valurent	Valsi	valesti	valse	Preterite, valemmo	valeste	valsero		
Vaudrai	vaudras	vaudra	vaudrons	vaudrez	vaudront	Vorrò, &c.			Future.				

## Wish, or be Willing.

SPANISH.								PORTUGUESE.							
Querer.		Infinitive. Queriendo.		Querido.		Querer.		Infinitive. Querendo.		Querido.					
Quiero	quieres	quiere	queremos	quereis	quieren	Quero	queres	quer	queremos	quereis	querem				
Quise	quisiste	quiso	Preterite. quisimos	quisisteis	quisieron	Quiz	quizeste	quiz	Preterite. quizemos	quizestes	quierão				
Querré	querras	querrá	Future. querrás	querreis	querran										
Quería	querrias	querria	Conditional. querriámos	querriáis	querriáis										
Quiere	quieres	quiére	Imperative. quiéra	querámos	quered	quiéran			queiras	queira	queiramos	queirais	queirão		
Quiera	quieras	quiera	Subjunctive Present. queramos	quérais	quiéran	Queira	queiras	queira	queiramos	queirais	queirão				
Quisiera	quisieras	quisiera	Imperfect. quisiéramos	quisiérais	quisieran	Quizera	quizeras	quizera	quizeramos	quizereis	quierão				
Quisiése	quisiéses	quisiese	quisiésemos	quisiéveis	quisiesen	Quizesse	quizesses	quizesse	quizessemos	quizesseis	quierão				
Quisiere	quisieres	quisiere	Future. quisiéremos	quisiéreis	quisieren	Quizer	quizeres	quizer	quizeremos	quizerdes	quierem				
Worth.															
Valer.		Infinitive. Valiendo.		Valido.		Valer.		Infinitive. Velendo.		Valido.					
Valgo	vales	vale	Indicative Present. valémos	valeis	valen	Valho	vales	vale, or val	valemos	valeis	valem				
Valdré	valdras	valdrá	Future. valdrémos	valdréis	valdran										

## VERBS.

## Worth—continued.

		FRENCH.				ITALIAN.			
		Conditional.				Conditional.			
Vaudrais	vaudrais	vaudrait	vaudrions	vaudriez	vaudraient	Varrei, &c.			
	vaux	vaille	Imperative.	valons	valez	vaillent	vali	Imperative.	
Vaille	vailles	vaille	Subjunctive Present.	valions	valiez	vaillent	Valga	Subjunctive Present.	
Valusse	valusses	valût	Imperfect.	valussions	valussiez	valussent	valga	valiamo	valate
							valga	valiamo	valgano
							valga	valiamo	valgano

## Write.

Écrire.		Infinitive. Écrivant.		Écrit.		Scrivere.		Infinitive. Scrivendo.		Scritto.	
Écris	écris	écrit	Indicative Present. écrivons	écrivez	écrivent						
Écrivais	écrivais	écrivait	Imperfect. écrivions	écriviez	écrivaient						
Écris	écris	écrit	Preterite. écrivimes	écrivites	écrivirent	Scrissi	scrivesti	scrisse	Preterite. scrivemmo	scriveste	scrissero
Écrirai	écriras	écrira	Future. écrirons	écrirez	écriront						
Écrirais	écrirais	écrirait	Conditional. écririons	écririez	écriraient						
	écris	écrive	Imperative. écrivons	écrivez	écrivent						
Écrive	écrives	écrive	Subjunctive Present. écrivions	écriviez	écrivent						
Écrivisse	écrivisse	écrivit	Imperfect. écrivissions	écrivissiez	écrivissent						

## Worth—continued.

		SPANISH.				PORTUGUESE			
		Conditional.							
Valdria,	valdrías	valdria	valdríamos	valdríais	valdrían				
		Imperative.					Imperative.		
vale		valga	valgámos	valed	válgan	vale]	valha	valhamos	valei
Valga	valgas	Subjunctive Present.	valga	valgámos	valgáis	Valha	valhas	valhams	valhais
							Subjunctive Present.		
							valha	valhams	valhão

## Write.

Escribir.—The only irregularity of this verb is in the past participle— <i>escrito</i> .	Same of Escrever, which makes <i>escrito</i> (written.)
--	---

## FRENCH.

There are also other Irregular Verbs which we have  
not thought necessary to conjugate amongst those in } Same.  
most common use ; such as,

*Envoyer*, which in the singular number of the present indicative, the imperative, and present subjunctive make *j'envoie*, &c. ; in the future and conditional, *j'enverrai*, &c., *j'enverrais*, &c. *Renvoyer* in same manner ; these and the verb *aller* (conjugated) are the only irregular verbs of the first conjugation.

*Bouillir* in the present indicative singular, *je bous*, &c. imp., *bous*.

*Offrir*, offrant, offert. Indicative present, *j'offre*, &c. ; imp., *j'offrais*, &c. ; pret., *j'offris*, &c. ; imp. and sub. pres., *offre*.

*Battre*, battant, battu—

*Je bats*, &c., *je battais*, *je battis*, *je battraï*, que *je batte*, que *je battisse*, &c.

*Coudre*, cousant, cousu—

*Je couds*, &c., *cousais*, *cousis*, *coudrai*, que *je cose*, que *je cousisse*.

*Feindre*, feignant, feint—

*Je feins*, &c., *feignais*, *feignis*, *feindrai*, que *je feigne*, que *je feignisse*.

## ITALIAN.

*Stare*—To stand ; to be ; to reside, &c.

Indic. Present—*Sto*, *stai*, *sta*, *stiamo*, *state*, *stanno*.

Pret.—*Stetti*, *stesti*, *stette*, *stemmo*, *steste*, *stettero*.

Fut. and Cond.—*Starò*, *starei*, &c. Imp.—*Sta*,

*stia*, *stiamo*, *state*, *stiano* or *stieno*. Sub. Pres.—

*Stia*, *stia*, *stia*, *stiamo*, *stiate*, *stiano* or *stieno*. Im-

perf.—*Stessi*, *stessi*, *stesse*, *stessimo*, *steste*, *stessero*.

The other irregular verbs of the first conjugation are already conjugated ; viz., *andare*, *dare*, and *fare*. There are also some derivatives which are irregular, and several which are regular in their inflexions ; such as,

*Riandare*, { to go again, *irregular*.  
                  { to examine, *regular*.

*Sovrastare*, { to tarry,   *irregular*.  
                  { to menace, *regular*.

*Cuocere*, *cocendo*, *cotto*—

*Cuoco*, *cuoci*, *cuoce*, *cociamo*, *cocete*, *cuocono*; *coceva*, &c., *cossi*, *cocesti*, *cosse*, *cocemmo*, *coceste*, *cossero*; *cocerò*, *cocerei*, &c., *cuoci*, *cuoca*, *cociamo*, *cocete*, *cuocano*; *cuoca*, *cuoca*, *cuoca*, *cociamo*, *cociate*, *cuocano*; *cocessi*, &c.

## SPANISH.

} Same.

*Caber*—

		Indicative Present.			
Quepo	cabes	cabe	cabemos	cabeis	caben
Cupe	cupiste	cupo	Preterite. cupimos	cupisteis	cupieron
Cabré	cabras	cabrá	Future. cabremos	cabreis	cabran
Cabria	cabrias	cabria	Conditional. cabriamos	cabriais	cabrian
		cabe	Imperative. quepamos	cabed	quepan
Quepa	quepas	quepa	Subjunctive Present. quepamos	quepais	quepan
Cupiera	cupieras	cupiera	Imperfect. cupieramos	cupierais	cupieran
Cupiese	cupieses	cupiese	Future. cupiesemos	cupieseis	cupiesen
Cupiere	cupieres	cupiere	cupieremos	cupiereis	cupieren

*Traer*, trayendo, traido.

Traigo, traes, &c.; traje, trajiste, trajó, trajimos, trajisteis, trajeron; traiga, &c. (imp. and sub.) trajera, &c.; trajese, &c.; trajere, &c.

*Oir*, oyendo, oido.

Oigo, oyes, oye, oimes, ois, oyen. Preterite—Oyó, oyeron. Imperative—Oye, oiga, oigamos, oid, oigan. Subjunctive Present—Oiga, &c.; oyera, &c.; oyese, &c.; oyere, &c.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Crer*, like ler—to read.*Trazer*—

Trago, trazes, traz, &c.; trouxe (or truxe), trouxeste, trouxe, trouxemos, trouxestes, trouxerão. Trarei, trarás, trará, traremos, trareis, trarão. Traria, &c. Imp.—Traze, traga, tragamos, trazei, tragão. Traga, &c.; trouxera, &c.; trouxesse, &c.; trouxer, &c.

*Perder*—

		Perde		Perdem	
		Imperative.			
Pero	perdes	perde	perdemos	perdeis	perdem
		perde	percamos	perdei	percão
Perca	percas	perca	Subjunctive Present. percamos	percais	percão

*Pedir*—

		Pede		Pedem	
		Imperative.			
Pego	pedes	pede	pedimos	pedis	pedem
		pede	peçamos	pedi	peção
Peça	peças	peça	Subjunctive. peçamos	peçais	peção

*Vestir*—

		Veste		Vestem	
		Imperative.			
Visto	vestes	veste	vestimos	vestis	vestem
		veste	vistamos	vesti	vistão
Vista	vistas	vista	Subjunctive. vistamos	vistas	vistão

## FRENCH.

*Croire*, croyant, cru—

Je crois, &c., croyais, crus, croirai, que je croie, que je crusse.

*Moudre*, moulant, moulu—

Je mouds, &c., moulais, moulus, moudrai, que je moule, que je moulusse.

*Suivre*, suivant, suivi—

Je suis, &c., suivais, suivis, suivrai, que je suive, que je suivisse, &c.

*Vaincre*, vainquant, vaincu—

Je vaincs, &c., vainquais, vainquis, vainerai, que je vainque, que je vainquisse, &c.

*Traire*, trayant, trait—

Je traïs, &c., trayais (no pret.), traïrai, que je traie, &c. (no imperfect subjunctive.)

## ITALIAN.

*Rimanere*, rimaso or rimasto—

Rimango, rimani, &c. Pret.—Rimasi, (a.); rimarrò; rimarrei. Imp.—Rimani, rimanga, &c.; rimanga, &c.

*Trarre* or *traere*, traendo, tratto—

Traggo, trai or traggi, trae or tragge, traiamo or traggiamo, traete, traggono or tranno; trassi; trarrò, trarrei; trai, tragga, &c.; traessi, &c.

*Udire*—

		Present Indicative.		
Odo	odi	ode	udiamo	udite
		odi	uda	odano
Oda	oda	oda	udiamo	udiate

*N.B.*—Most derivatives are conjugated in the same manner as the preceding forms of irregular verbs.

Note a.—The preterite of irregular verbs, second and third conjugations, is formed as follows:—

First person singular always ends in *i*, which changes into *e* to form the third person singular, and this adds *ro* to form the third person plural; the others are regular.

*Examples*.—Correre—To run.

Singular.

1st, *Corsi*.

2nd, *Corresti*.

3rd, *Corse*.

Plural.

2nd, *Correste*.

3rd, *Corsero*.

## SPANISH.

*Jugar*—

Juego, juegas, juega, jugamos, jugais, juegan, jugué,  
jugaste, &c. ; juega, juegue, juguemos, jugad,  
jueguen ; juegue, &c. (subj. pres.)

*Pedir*, pidiendo, pedido.

Pido, pides, pide, pedimos, pedis, piden. Preterite—  
Pidió, pidieron. Imperative—Pide, pida, pidamos,  
pedid, pidan. Subjunctive Present—Pida, &c. ;  
pidiera, &c. ; pidiese, &c. ; pidiere, &c.

The general irregularities of Spanish verbs are as follows :—

In *eer* and *uir* change the *i* of the termination into *y* before *e* or *o* (in *uir* the change is also made before *a*.)

In *acer*, *ecer*, *ocer*, *ucir*, add *z* before the radical *c* where the terminations begin with *o* or *a* ; as,

*Leer*, leyendo, &c.

*Instruir*, instruyo, &c.

*Conocer*, conozco, &c.

Verbs ending in *llir* and *ñir* drop the *i* in the terminations when followed by *e* or *o* ; as *ceñir*, *ciño*, &c.

N.B.—Most derivatives are conjugated in the same manner as the preceding forms of irregular verbs. } Same.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Subir*—

Subo	sobes	sobe	subimos	subis	sobem
		suba	Imperative.		
	sobe		subamos	sobi	subão

*Caber*—

Caibo	cabes	cabe	cabemos	cabes	cabem
Coube	coubeste	coube	coubemos	coubestes	coubearão
Caiba, &c.	cabe	caiba	caibamos	cabei	caibão
			coubesse, &c.	coubere,	&c.

*Ouvir*—

Ouço, ouves, &c. Sub.—Ouça, ouças, &c.

There are several verbs in *uzir* which are regular, with the exception that in the third person sing., present ind., the *e* is suppressed ; as, *Produzir*, *produz*.

## MOODS AND TENSES.

## Indicative Present.

141. This tense is easily understood on reference to the models of verbs already given. It may, however, be remarked, that in all these languages, as in English, the *present* tense is sometimes employed for the *past* and for the *future*, in order to throw some animation or emphasis into the expression. It frequently serves for the

## Imperfect and Preterite Definite.

142. The right employment of these tenses in other languages is seldom sufficiently studied by the English. This arises partly from the fact that in their language the same inflection of the verb is frequently used for both the tenses.

When the verb expresses an action in a state of *continuance* or habit, the *imperfect* must be employed ; when a period is distinctly defined, and it is clearly understood that the action has passed away, use the *preterite definite*, or, as many call it, the *past perfect*. Such are the general rules ; but we think them insufficient without some very clear examples to illustrate them, and a few observations which are applicable to *all* the languages under our notice.

In the column devoted to French, among the examples which come hereafter, we read : Il *retrouva*, à son retour, les mêmes désordres : les Espagnols *abusaien*t de la superstition des naturels, et de la terreur que leur *inspiraien*t les chevaux—“On his return, he *found* the same disorders.” Here the period is clearly defined : he did not *continue* finding, but actually, *positively*, on his return, *found* the same disorders. The Spaniards *abused* (or took advantage of) the superstition of the natives, and the terror with which the horses *inspired* them. Note the distinction : the Spaniards *abused* (*abusaien*t) : they are described as *continuing to abuse*, being in the *habit*

## MOODS AND TENSES.

## Indicative Present.

*past* tense when describing some particular event, a battle for example :—The troops *advance*, they *fire* upon the enemy, &c. When employed for the *future*, it usually refers to a time close at hand : as, Demain il *est* mort—to-morrow he *dies*. Io *vengo* subito—I will come soon.

## Imperfect and Preterite Definite.

of abusing. The word *inspiraient* denotes also that the action is *continuative*. The verb *retrouva* (found) is, therefore, placed in the *preterite definite*, and the others in the *imperfect* tense.

One of the Italian examples will also materially assist our explanation : Essa *parlava* ancora quando Gertrude già *dormiva*. Il sonno non fu rotto che dalla voce della vecchia che *venne* a vederla—She *spoke*, that is, *continued speaking*, while Gertrude *slept*, or *continued sleeping*. The sleep was broken only by the voice of the old woman who *came* to see her. The verb *came* does not imply any *habitual* action. Had it been meant to say that the old woman *came daily*, was in the *habit* of coming, then the verb would have been placed by the Italian in the *imperfect tense* : as, *Veniva* ogni giorno (she came every day.)

It also follows from these observations that when describing any customs or habits, any professions or occupations of individuals in a former period, the *imperfect* tense should be employed.

A careful study of the examples which now follow will further serve to elucidate our meaning, and to remove a difficulty which often troubles the student of a foreign language, and which invariably leads into error those who endeavour to speak without having first acquired some grammatical guidance.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples*

Ce fut là qu'il apprit le drame terrible dont on l'accusait.  
It was there that he learnt the terrible drama of which  
they accused him.

Cette tante se faisait appeler Madame D. ; et elle était  
veuve.

This aunt called herself Madame D. ; and she was a  
widow.

Il retrouva, à son retour, les mêmes désordres. Les  
Espagnols abusaient de la superstition des naturels,  
et de la terreur que leur inspiraient les chevaux.

He found, on his return, the same disorders. The  
Spaniards took advantage of the superstition of the  
natives, and of the terror with which the horses in-  
spired them.

Il construit des forts, traça des routes, chercha l'or, moins  
abondant qu'il ne l'attendait dans ces régions.

He constructed forts, traced roads, and sought gold,  
which was less abundant than he expected in those  
regions.

143. After the conjunction *si* (if), the imperfect tense  
of the indicative mood is nearly always adopted by the  
French.

*Example.*

*Si j'en étais sûr, je le dirais.*

If I were sure of it, I would say so.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Egli era uomo di molta autorità presso ai suoi.  
He was a man of much authority among his people.  
La donna che venne ad accompagnarla nella sua stanza  
era una vecchia di casa.

The woman who came to accompany her into her room  
was an old servant of the house.

Essa parlava ancora quando Gertrude già dormiva.  
Il sonno non fu rotto che dalla voce della vecchia  
che venne a vederla.

She was speaking while Gertrude slept. The sleep  
was broken only by the voice of the old woman who  
came to see her.

“Addio !” disse tristamente Luisa ad Alfonso, che non  
sapeva risolversi d'andarsene.

“Adieu !” sadly said Louisa to Alphonso, who did not  
know how to resolve upon going away.

*Se* (if,) in Italian, unlike the French, requires the  
verb which follows to be placed in the *subjunctive  
mood*.

*Example.*

*Se io ne fossi certo, lo direi.*

If I were sure of it, I would say so.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Mientras el anacoreta *estaba* hablando.

While the anchorite was speaking.

Entonces el caballero *habló* de esta manera.

Then the gentleman spoke in this manner.

Todo aquello que *servía* de alimento á nuestros primeros padres.

All that which served as food for our forefathers.

*Notóle* el viejo y le *dijo*.

The old man noticed it, and said to him.

*Era* la guardia real que *hacia* el servicio militar en el palacio.

It was the royal guard which performed the military service in the palace.

*Naci* en Madrid, y mi origen *fué* el que voy á referir.

I was born in Madrid, and my origin was that which I am going to relate.

*Llamabase* Juan, y solo pensaba en darse.

He was called John, and only thought of giving himself.

} Same of *si* (if.)

*Example.*

Lo haria *si* tuviera tiempo.  
I would do it if I had time.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Este tratado *estipulava* a troca de ractificacões.

This treaty stipulated the exchange of ratifications.

*Era* conforme com as instruccões que *recebestes*.

It was in accordance with the instructions which you received.

Chega o "Londres" que já se *demorava* e que *soffreu* um forte temporal.

The "London," which was delayed, and which suffered a violent storm, is arriving.

*Recebi* e *summetti* á rainha os vossos despachos.

I received and submitted to the Queen your despatches.

Desde que *deixou* a administracão, o Dr S. *retirou-se* para uma chacara dos arrabaldes.

Soon as he left the administration Dr S. retired to a farm in the suburbs.

Tal soberano, no dia em que seu reinado *começou*, *morreou* para si e *nasceu* para os outros.

Which sovereign, on the day when his reign commenced, died for himself and was born for others.

} Same of *se* (if.)

*Example.*

O faria *se* tivera tempo.  
I would do it if I had time.

## Preterite Indefinite, or Compound of the Present.

## FRENCH.

144. This tense is employed when in relation to a period which still continues : as, This day ; this week ; this month ; this year.

*Example.*

*Je vous ai vu trois fois cette semaine.*  
I have seen you three times this week.

## ITALIAN.

*Example.*  
*Quest'oggi vi ho visto tre volte.*  
I have seen you three times to-day.

## Future Tense

Besides the usual employment of this tense, as seen in the models of verbs, the following peculiarities must be noted :—

145. It is frequently used when any doubt is expressed ; for instance, by the word “perhaps.”

*Example.*

*Déjà peut-être sera-t-il venu.*  
He is perhaps already come.

*Example.*

*Egli forse sarà già venuto.*  
He is perhaps already come.

## Preterite Indefinite, or Compound of the Present.

SPANISH.

{ Same.

*Example.*

*Le he visto hoy tres veces.*  
I have seen him three times to-day.

PORTUGUESE.

The preterite indefinite (or compound of the present) is not of frequent use by the Portuguese, who generally in its place employ the preterite definite.

*Examples.*

*Hoje vim levantou-se de madrugada.*  
To-day, you rose early.  
*Almocei muito bem.*  
I have breakfasted well.

## Future Tense.

{ Same.

{ Same.

*Example.*

*Vendrá quizá para hablarme.*  
He is come perhaps to speak to me.

In Portuguese, the future is not used as in French and the other languages in the place of the present indicative or subjunctive. There is, however, a form of the future which is in constant employment, namely, the present indicative of *haver*; *hei, has, ha, hemos, heis, hão*, (Note a,) (the first and second persons plural are contracted,) and the infinitive of another verb. When a pronoun is used it is placed between the two verbs.

Note a.—The simple future of all Portuguese verbs is formed by the addition of *hei, has, &c.*, to the infinitive, the letter *h* being suppressed; as, *amar-hei* becomes *amarei*—I will love. Sometimes in irregular verbs the form of the infinitive is contracted; as, *fazer-hei*, which makes in the future *farei, fazer-has, faras, &c.*

## FRENCH.

146. Interrogative sentences are sometimes in form  
of the *future*, when in English they are expressed by } Same.  
"may," "can," &c.

*Example.*

*Pourrai-je vous dire quelque chose ?*  
May I say something to you ?

## ITALIAN.

*Potrò dirvi qualche cosa ?*  
May I say something to you ?

147. After the conjunction *si* (if) a verb is frequently placed in the *present* tense, while another verb in the same sentence takes the *future*. } In such an instance an Italian would place *both* the verbs in the *future* tense.

*Example.*

*Je viendrai si je puis.*  
I will come if I can.

*Example.*

*Io verrò se potrò.*  
I will come if I can.

148. In English the word "will" is very often considered as the future form of another verb, while in reality it is in itself a distinct verb denoting a voluntary act.

The French equivalent in such a case is expressed by *vouloir*, to be willing, to wish. } *Volere*, to be willing, to wish.

*Examples.*

*Voulez-vous me donner ce livre là ?*  
Will you give me that book ?  
*Je vous le donnerai demain.*  
I will give it you to-morrow.

*Examples.*

*Volete darmi quel libro ?*  
Will you give me that book ?  
*Domani ve lo darò.*  
I will give it you to-morrow.

## SPANISH.

} Same.

*Example.*

*i Habrá cosa mas desgraciada ?*  
Can there be a more unfortunate thing ?

} Same as French.

*Example.*

*Iré á su casa, si hace bueno.*  
I will go to your house, if the weather is fine.

} Same.

} *Querer*, to be willing, to wish.

*Examples.*

*i Quiere, Vm. darme ese libro ?*  
Will you give me that book ?  
Se lo *daré* mañana.  
I will give it you to-morrow.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

*Example.*

*O senhor, far-me-ha o favor ?*  
Sir, will you do me the favour ?

} The Portuguese would use the Subjunctive future.

*Example.*

*Fâ-lo-hei se puder.*  
I will do it if I can.

} Same.

} *Querer*, to be willing, to wish.

*Examples.*

*Quer. V. tomar limonada ?*  
Will you take some lemonade ?  
*Não, tomarei chá.*  
No, I will take some tea.

## FRENCH.

*Remark.*—The last example is for the purpose of showing the difference between the *future* form of the verb *to give* and the two verbs *to be willing to give*, } Same. expressed in the first example.

## ITALIAN.

149. This mood has two tenses, present and past (or compound of the present.) It may be used interrogatively, as follows :— } Same.

*Example.*

*Pourrais-je vous demander votre nom ?*  
Might I ask your name ?

*Example.*

*Potrei domandarvi il vostro nome ?*  
Might I ask your name ?

## Imperative Mood.

150. The only rule requiring special note is, that when the second person singular terminates in *e*, as in the first conjugation, and is followed by the pronoun *en*, or *y*, an *s* is added for the sake of euphony, except when *en* or *y* relates to another verb immediately following.

*Example.*

*Parles-en.*  
Speak thou of it.

It is peculiar to Italian, and may be here noticed as the only necessary rule, that when the second person singular is accompanied by a negative the *infinitive* is used instead of the *imperative* mood.

*Examples.*

<i>Non parlare</i>	do not thou speak.
<i>Non pensare</i>	do not thou think.

SPANISH.

}

Same.

PORTUGUESE.

}

Same.

**Conditional Mood.**

In the grammar of the Royal Academy of Madrid, this mood is made to form a part of the *subjunctive*: the same plan is adopted by many Spanish grammarians. The termination *ria*, nevertheless, always shows the verb *to be* in a *conditional mood*: we, therefore, depart from the usual custom, and include in the conjugations of all verbs the *conditional mood*, which corresponds with the same in other languages.

The Portuguese conditional, like that in Spanish, terminates in *ria*; it is also frequently expressed by the imperfect subjunctive in *ra*; as *Quisera ver um chapéo a moda*, I should like to see a fashionable hat.

**Imperative Mood.**

When in English the imperative is used in a *negative* phrase, the Spanish employ the present tense of the *subjunctive mood*.

*Examples.*

*No le temas*  
*No le temais*

do not (thou) fear him.  
do not (you) fear him.

We have nothing particular to point out respecting the imperative mood; but it may be useful to remark that in Portuguese it properly consists of only the *second person*, singular and plural, the first person singular not existing, and the rest being identical with the present subjunctive.

## Subjunctive Mood.

151. Verbs in this mood are always dependent upon some foregoing proposition, either expressed or understood. The general rule is to place a verb in the subjunctive mood when it follows the equivalent of the conjunctions *that*, *if*, &c., preceded by a verb or adjective expressing *desire*, *will*, *command*, *doubt*, *fear*, *possibility*, *necessity*, and the like. It must be here observed that the English frequently suppress the word *that*, leaving it to be understood, but in other languages it is always expressed.—(Note a.) For instance, *je veux qu'il vienne*; or, *voglio che venga*, (I wish he may come.)

Many of the grammars, written for English students of foreign languages, lay great stress upon the difficulties which constantly present themselves in the endeavour to obtain a clear understanding of the subjunctive mood, and they add considerably to these seeming difficulties by multiplying rules in such an unnecessary manner as to confuse rather than assist the learner. They usually say that the subjunctive mood must always be used after expressions such as the following :—

In order that ; it is necessary that ; it is possible that ; it is just that ; I wish that ; I fear that ; and a host of others, each expression having its separate rules, examples, and exercises.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Avant que tes amis se soient aperçus de ton absence.*

Before thy friends may have perceived thy absence.

*Quelque effort que fassent les hommes leur néant paraît partout.*

Whatever effort man may make, his nothingness is everywhere apparent.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Non è che io non lo meriti.*

It is not that I do not deserve it.

*Non potrebbe darsi che fosse una di queste maschere che si fosse preso divertimento di me ?*

Is it not (or, might it not be) possible that it is (or might be) one of these masks who is joking with me ?

Note a.—We say that the conjunction *that* is *always* expressed in other languages. This is the general rule, and perhaps without an exception in French ; but in Italian it is occasionally understood, not expressed : this may be said also of the Spanish and Portuguese languages, in which, however, the exceptions are rare.

## Subjunctive Mood.

This system is (perhaps) needed by those alone who are totally unacquainted with grammar, even that of their own language, and who are being taught its principles. Presuming, then, that the nature of the subjunctive mood is understood, for it is the same in all languages, we will add to the general rule, given above, an observation which, it is hoped, will spare much labour and confusion. When the words *may*, *might*, and *should* (signs of the subjunctive) are used with a verb in English, or the phrase may be so turned that one of them *can* be used, the verb in the foreign language may safely be rendered by the corresponding equivalent shown in the models of verbs conjugated (subjunctive mood.) For instance, the sentence, "In order that you *may* be just," is rendered in French, *Afin que vous soyez juste*: this, like all other similar expressions, requires no special rule, but simply a reference to the form of auxiliary verbs which will show the equivalent of "You *may* be." Again, "I *must* come to-morrow," the phrase may be turned thus, "It is necessary that I *should* come to-morrow." An Italian would render it: *Bisogna che io venga domani*.

It must be borne in mind that the word *should* (in English), coming after the conjunction *that*, must not be confounded with *should*, the sign of the *conditional mood*.

The following examples will bear out the rule given, and show its application:—

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Te mando le *digas* se *dirija* á otra persona que *haga*  
mas caso de ello.

I command thee to say to him that he must address  
himself to another person who may make more of it.

i En que desais que os *sirva*?  
In what do you wish me to serve you?

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Para que a comissão *possa* procurar  
In order that the commission may be able to procure.

Importa que *seja* conspicio no exemplo.  
It is necessary to be conspicuous in the example.

Farei o que me pedes, *se puder*.  
I will do what thou askest me, if I can.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

Attendez que je revienne.  
Wait until I (may) return.

Le juge ordonna qu'il fût décapité.

The judge ordered that he should be beheaded.

Il semble que les climats extrêmement chauds soient contraires aux chevaux.

It seems that (or as if) climates extremely hot are unfavourable to horses.

Mais, bien que le roi et la reine eussent confondu ainsi leurs provinces séparées en une seule patrie ils conservaient néanmoins une domination distincte.

But, although the king and queen had thus amalgamated their separate provinces in one sole country, they, nevertheless, preserved a distinct rule.

*Remark.*—The tenses of the subjunctive mood must always accord with those of the indicative and conditional, namely :—

The present and future of the indicative are accompanied by the present of the subjunctive.

The past of the indicative by the past of the subjunctive.

The conditional by the past of the subjunctive.

## ITALIAN.

Se vostra madre ne fosse intesa, morirebbe dalla disperazione.

If your mother knew it (or might be aware of it), she would die of despair.

Onde converrà che ad un solo mi doni.

Then i will be right that I should give myself to one only

Non volete ch' io vi conosca ?

Do you not wish me to know you ?

Non volete ch' io sappia i vostri titoli ?

Do you not wish me to know your titles ?

Same.

## SPANISH.

*Cueste* lo que *costare*.

Let it cost what it may (or will).

Corria gran peligro si Dios no me *hubiera* deparado un tío, &c.

I ran great danger if God had not given me an uncle, &c.

Lo mismo diría aunque *fuerá* la mula del papa.

He would have said the same even if it had been the pope's mule.

Esto es, que *anduviese* al paso que *quisiese*.

That is, that he should go at the pace he might wish.

Al regresar su mujer la dijo que le *siguiese*.

On the return of his wife, he told her to follow him.

Pensé que nunca *acabase*.

I thought that he would never finish.

The agreement of the tenses in the indicative with those of the subjunctive mood is the same as in French and Italian.

Also the rule as to placing a verb in the indicative where absolute certainty is expressed.

## PORTUGUESE.

Se a taboa *tivera* dado de si, *houvera* podido custar-lhe a vida.

Had the plank given way, it might have cost him his life.

Ordenava a um dos officiaes que *recebesse* as credencias. He ordered one of his officers to receive the credentials. Difficil *seria* sua missão, se não *encontrasse* seguranza para suas palavras.

Difficult would be his mission, if he did not find a guarantee for his words.

Não só para ser o primeiro que *tivesse* a distincta honra.

Not only to be the first who might have the distinguished honour.

} Same.

} Same : as,  
*Creio que ha um só Deos.*  
I believe that there is but one God.

In the Spanish and Portuguese languages, it will be observed, on reference to the conjugations of verbs, that there are certain tenses of the subjunctive mood which are not possessed (that is, in a separate form) by the French and Italians. The two former have a *future* of the subjunctive, thus employed :—

When a *simple* tense, it refers only to a future subordinate action, as in the third example (Spanish) : *Cueste*

## FRENCH.

152. The subjunctive mood is essentially one of doubt and uncertainty; but sometimes the verb or adjective which usually governs it is capable of conveying the idea of *absolute certainty*: the second verb in such instances assumes the *indicative*, which is a mood of *firm conviction*. The examples will show the distinction.

*Examples.*

Il est heureux ! il *croit* qu'il y *a* un Dieu.

He is happy ! he believes that there is a God.

*Croyez-vous* qu'il *soit* malade ?

Do you think (or believe) that he is ill ?

} Same.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

È felice ! *crede* che vi è un Dio.

He is happy ! he believes that there is a God.

*Credete* ch' egli sia ammalato ?

Do you think (or believe) that he is ill ?

## SPANISH.

## PORTUGUESE.

lo que *costare*, and the third example (Portuguese) : Farei o que me pedes, *se puder*—I will do what thou askest me, if I can (or shall be able). The French would render this : Je ferai ce que tu demandes, si je le *puis*—using the present indicative ; while the Italians would say : Se *potrò*—employing the future indicative.

The *compound future* has reference to a *past*, subordinate to a *future* event ; as, Si él *hubiere dejado* Madrid *antes que llegase su hermano*—If he should have left Madrid before his brother might arrive.

This tense, both in its simple and compound forms, may be substituted by the *present* of the subjunctive, (except when the conjunction *si* or *se* (if) precedes the verb) ; as (in Portuguese), Logo que venha (or vier) o homem—Soon as the man shall come.

The *imperfect* of the subjunctive is not so easily understood. Spanish grammarians usually give it three terminations—*Ra*, *se*, *ria*—and quite ignore a separate *conditional mood*, of which *ria* is nevertheless the indication : we, therefore, place this in the conjugations of verbs in its corresponding position, the *conditional mood*, especially as it coincides with the *ria* of the Portuguese, who have also the terminations *ra* and *se*, subject to the same employment as in the Spanish language. No *fixed* particular rules can possibly be laid down for the purpose of showing where these inflections may be used distinctly, or where indiscriminately.

Emanuel Del Mar, in his "Grammar of the Spanish Language," which is altogether an excellent work, is decidedly mistaken in the *general rule* he gives on their employment. He writes :—"The most general rule which can be given for the employment of these terminations, is, that *ra* or *se* correspond with the signs *might* or *should*, and *ria* corresponds with *would*. This rule, however, will be subject to some exceptions; nevertheless the learner will find it very useful."

The examples given above (only a few out of many similar which have been collected) clearly show that such a rule would tend to mislead and confuse rather than prove "useful" to the learner. Perhaps the best general rule that can be given is that—

*ria* corresponds with the conditional of other languages ; that

*se* refers to a time less remote and less determined than

*ra*; and that the latter often agrees with the *compounds* of the imperfect indicative and of the conditional in other languages.

## Infinitive Mood.

## FRENCH.

153. There are many sentences in English where a verb, depending upon another closely preceding it, is put in the form of a participle, but which, in French, is placed in the infinitive mood (Note a.)

*Examples.*

Je l'entends *chanter*.

I hear him *singing*.

Les airs que j'ai entendu *chanter*.

The airs which I have heard *sung*.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

La sentiva *cantare*.

I heard her singing.

L'aria che ho sentito *cantare*.

The air which I have heard sung.

The infinitive is often used substantively, or as the subject to another verb. It is then preceded by the definite article (singular masculine.)

*Examples.*

Le manger ; le dormir.

Eating ; sleeping.

*Examples.*

Il leggere ; lo studiare.

Reading ; studying (or study).

Note a.—In French, as in other foreign languages, it is difficult to determine what preposition should precede the infinitive, or, rather, should follow the verb or adjective which governs the infinitive. This difficulty must be overcome by practice and attention in reading. It is perfectly useless to give long lists of verbs, adjectives, and their respective prepositions. It will be found that no two grammars agree when they attempt to give correct lists, and that few learners ever endeavour to profit by those which are offered.

## Infinitive Mood.

SPANISH.

} Same.

*Examples.*La oigo *cantar*.

I hear her singing.

La cancion que he oido *cantar*.

The song which I have heard sung.

} Same.

*Examples.*

El comer ; el estudiar.

Eating ; reading.

PORTUGUESE.

The Portuguese infinitive, besides being used as in French and the other languages, has an advantage which these do not possess. It is capable of varying its termination precisely in the same manner as the future of the subjunctive mood, except in the verb *pôr* and its compounds, thus ceasing to be absolute ; as, *dares tu*, for thee to give, or that thou mayst give ; *depois de fazerem suas orações*, after they had prayed.

} Same

*Examples.*

O estudar ; o dormir.

Studying ; sleeping.

## Participle Present (or Active, or Gerund.)

## FRENCH.

154. This participle is invariable—that is, it does not change its termination in the feminine gender or plural number, as do adjectives and *past* participles. It always ends in *ant*.

## Examples.

L'homme	voyant la chose inutile.
La femme	
Les hommes	

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

155. In French there are many *verbal adjectives* formed from the present participle, and varying, like all other adjectives, according to gender and number; for example: Un homme charmant, une femme charmante. The adjective is easily perceived here as qualifying a noun; but in the phrase, Un homme, or une femme charmant tout le monde (charming all the world), the present participle is apparent: it qualifies nothing; but expresses an action.

156. Substantives are also formed from this participle, and vary according to gender and number; as, Protestant; masc. Protestante; fem. Intrigants, pl. masc.

## ITALIAN.

Same: ending in *ando* or *endo*, according to the conjugation.

## Examples.

L'uomo	vedendo la cosa inutile.
La donna	
Gli uomini	

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

There is also in Italian an active participle sometimes employed as a verbal adjective, agreeing in number with the noun to which it refers. Its termination being always *e* in the singular, it is common to both genders; as, Un uomo amante—a loving man; le donne leggenti—the women reading. Le donne che leggono, is the form generally adopted.

Substantives are also formed, varying in number and common to both genders; as,

Protestante,	masc. and fem. sing.
Protestanti,	„ pl.

## Participle Present (or Active, or Gerund.)

## SPANISH.

} Same: ends in *ando* from verbs of first conjugation; in *iendo* (sometimes *yendo*) from verbs of second and third conjugations.

*Examples.*

El hombre	{	viendo la cosa inutil.
La muger		
Los hombres		
Las mugeres		

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

} Same as Italian.

*Example.*

Las cartas procedentes de España.  
The letters coming from Spain.

} Same; as—

Un creyente (m. and f.), a believer.  
Los creyentes (,, ), the believers.

## PORTUGUESE.

In the Portuguese language the present participle, or Gerund, is formed by changing the *r* of the infinitive into *ndo*, as *comer*, *comendo*: it is invariable in gender and number.

*Examples.*

O homem	{	vendo a cosa inutil.
A mulher		
Os homens		
As mulheres		

The man, &c., seeing that the thing was useless.

} Same.

*Example.*

Como amantes e amados filhos.  
Like loving and beloved children.

} Same; as—

Protestante, m. and f. singular.  
Protestantes, m. and f. plural.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

When in English the present participle is employed with the auxiliary verb *to be*, it must be rendered in French as follows :—

*Examples.*

Je parle à monsieur.

{ I am speaking to this  
gentleman.

Il recevait.

He was receiving.

Il vient aujourd'hui.

He is coming to-day.

Elle écrit.

She is writing.

## ITALIAN.

In the same manner by the Italians, who use also as auxiliaries the verbs *stare*, *venire*, and *andare*, with the participle.

*Examples.*

Io scrivo.

Io sto scrivendo.

Egli cerca.

Egli viene cercando.

I am writing.

He is seeking.

## Participle Past (or Passive.)

157. The participle past in some languages, especially in French, is perhaps the most difficult part of speech to acquire correctly. French philologists have devoted whole volumes to this subject alone ; thence, naturally, may disputes and complications have arisen. We think, however, that a comparison with the English language will enable us to simplify some of the rules, and give to those who understand English an advantage which Frenchmen writing only their own language cannot possess.

## With Verb "To be."

158. When preceded by any part of the auxiliary verb *to be*, the past participle assumes the nature of an adjective, agreeing *always* in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it refers.

} Same.

## SPANISH.

Same, and with auxiliary *estar*.

*Examples.*

- |                |                     |
|----------------|---------------------|
| Vengo hoy.     | I am coming to-day. |
| Habla, or      |                     |
| Está hablando. | He is speaking.     |

Same.

## PORTUGUESE.

- |                   |                      |
|-------------------|----------------------|
| <i>Examples.</i>  |                      |
| <i>Comemos.</i>   | We are eating.       |
| O homem falla, or |                      |
| Está fallando.    | The man is speaking. |

## Participle Past (or Passive.)

The Italian past participle is not so difficult as the French; but it requires great attention.

The Spanish and Portuguese are more easily acquired.

We would here recommend the student to refresh his memory by again reading the observations relating to *direct* and *indirect regimens* (page 82), without understanding which he cannot clearly apprehend the rules on past participles.

## With Verb "To be."

Same.

Same.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

<i>Il est occupé.</i>	He is occupied.
<i>Elle est occupée.</i>	She is occupied.
<i>Les hommes sont occupés.</i>	The men are occupied.
<i>Les femmes sont occupées.</i>	The women are occupied.

159. It is frequently used without the auxiliary verb *being expressed*, and then varies according to preceding rule.

*Example.*

Alors mille circonstances *oubliées* se représenterent à son esprit.  
Then a thousand circumstances (which had been) forgotten were recollected.

## With Verb "To have."

160. With the auxiliary verb *To have*, the past participle is always *indeclinable when followed by the direct regimen*, or accusative.

*Examples.*

<i>J'ai vu votre frère.</i>	I have seen your brother.
<i>J'ai vu votre sœur.</i>	I have seen your sister.
<i>Je vous ai donné quelque chose</i> (Note a.)	
<i>I have given to you something.</i>	

Note a.—Observe that *vous* is the *indirect*, and *quelque chose* the *direct*, regimen.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

<i>Egli è occupato.</i>	He is occupied.
<i>Ella è occupata.</i>	She is occupied.
<i>Gli uomini sono occupati.</i>	The men are occupied.
<i>Le donne sono occupate.</i>	The women are occupied.

} Same.

*Example.*

*Finita la conversazione, egli partì.*  
The conversation (being) finished, he left.

It is always correct to follow the same rule in Italian, although frequently, when the accusative follows closely upon the participle, the latter agrees for the sake of euphony.

*Examples.*

<i>Oggi ho visto le vostre sorelle.</i>	
<i>To-day I have seen your sisters.</i>	
<i>Oggi ho ricevute lettere da Messina.</i>	
<i>To-day I have received letters from Messina.</i>	

## SPANISH.

*Examples.**El es amado.*

He is loved.

*Ella es amada.*

She is loved.

*Los hombres son amados.*

The men are loved.

*Las mugeres son amadas.*

The women are loved.

} Same.

*Example.**Acabada* la conversacion, llamó á su hija.

The conversation (being) finished, he called his daughter.

*Elle é amado.**Ella é amada.**Os homens são amados.**As mulheres são amadas.*

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

He is loved.

She is loved.

The men are loved.

The women are loved.

} Same.

*Example.**Conseguido* o dinheiro, e feita a promessa.

The money being obtained, and the promise (being) made.

## With Verb "To have."

The past participle with the verb *To have*, in Spanish, differs entirely from the French and Italian in the rules which govern the change of termination. These are more easily understood both in the Spanish and Portuguese languages.

With any part of the verb *haber* (to have), the past participle is *always invariable*.

} Same.

} Same of *Ter* and *Haber* (Note a.)

Note a.—Formerly the participle past, with the verb *To have*, was sometimes used as an adjective, changing in number and gender : it is no longer so employed.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

161. It is also *indeclinable* when the nominative  
alone is expressed. } Same.

## Examples.

*J'ai chanté.*

I have sung.

*Ils ont chanté.*

They have sung.

## ITALIAN.

*Io ho cantato.*

I have sung.

*Noi abbiamo cantato.*

We have sung.

162. But when the past participle (with the verb *To have*) is preceded by the *direct regimen*, the former varies according to gender and number.

## Examples.

*Quelque chose que je vous ai donnée.*

Something which I have given you.

*Ces six mille francs, il me les avait volés à moi.*

These six thousand francs, he had stolen them from me.

*Vers la route qu'il a parcourue.*

Towards the road which he had gone over.

*Il a pris ces paroles en mauvaise part, et il vous les a répétées.*

He has taken these words in bad part, and has repeated them to you.

Note a.—This can be written *l'ho fatta*; but the pronoun is put in full to show more clearly its gender: the same in some of the examples which follow.

In Italian, when the direct regimen *precedes* the participle past, the latter does *not* agree with it in the same manner as in French, where the relative pronoun *who* or *which* carries the same gender as the noun or pronoun to which it refers, and communicates it to the participle.

The rule is:—When any one of the accusative personal pronouns, *lo, il, li, gli, le, me, te, la, ci, si, ne* immediately precedes any part of the verb *avere*, the participle agrees with it in gender and number.

It may also agree with any other *accusative*, whether before or after the verb, for the sake of harmony.

## Examples.

*Questa biancheria la ho (Note a) fatta io.*

I have made this linen.

*Ho detto uno sproposito che la ha fatta ridere.*

I said some nonsense which made her laugh.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Su vista me *ha turbado*.

The sight of him has disturbed me.

Despues de *haberla leido*.

After having read it.

*Ha habido* varios heridos.

He had several wounds.

La perdida que *habia experimentado*.

The loss which he had experienced.

Las desgracias que me *habian sucedido*.

The misfortunes which had happened to me.

*Ho visto* sus billetes y vuestras respuestas.

I have seen his letters and your replies.

*Remark.*—*Haber* sometimes forms the compound of } the verb *To be*. In such a case, of course, the participle } varies according to gender and number; as,

*Habia estado suspendida* la constitucion.

The constitution had been suspended.

*Haber* is nearly always the verb used as the auxiliary } *To have*: occasionally, however, *tener* is employed, in } which case the participle changes only when directly } referring to a noun or pronoun expressed in the sen- }

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Elle *tem ja visitado* alguns estabelecimentos.

He has already visited some establishments.

Sem *ter havido* communicação alguma para terra.

Without having had any communication by land.

De que *tem dado* sobejas provas.

Of which he has given sufficient proofs.

Os grandes festejos que se *haviam preparado*.

The great festivities which had been prepared.

Os dois chefes *têm estado estabelecidos* em Londres.  
The two chiefs have been established in London.

Unlike the Spanish, *Ter* is nearly always the verb used in Portuguese as the auxiliary *To have*: in any case, the participle is *invariable*.

## FRENCH.

*Remark.*—Observe well the last example. *Paroles* (words), feminine plural, follows the participle, which is therefore unchanged. The pronoun *Les* (not an article here) is the *direct regimen* relating to *paroles*, and comes before the participle *Répétées*, which, in consequence, takes the form of the feminine plural.

## ITALIAN.

Ma apena *le ha vedute* *le ha invitato* a pranzo seco.  
But he has scarcely seen them and asks them to dine with him.

Avrò per lei quella attenzione *che non ho mai avuto* per alcuna persona di questo mondo.

I will have for you that attention which I have never had for any one in this world.

## With Pronominal Verbs.

163. Pronominal verbs, always conjugated with two pronouns of the same person, require the participle to agree in gender and number, *except* when a direct regimen follows it, in which case a part of the verb *To have* is understood.

*Examples.*

Elle s'est tuée.

She has killed herself.

Elle s'est adressé une lettre.

She has addressed a letter to herself.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Ella si è uccisa.

She has killed herself.

Ella si è tagliato un dito.

She has cut off a finger.

## With Unipersonal Verbs.

164. With unipersonal verbs, which are used only in the third person singular, the participle is always invariable.

} Same, except when a noun closely follows the participle.

*Example.*

Les chaleurs qu'il a fait.

The warm weather which there has been.

*Examples.*

Che cosa vi è accaduto? What has happened to you?  
Mi è accaduta una cosa strana.

There has happened to me an extraordinary thing.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

- Tengo *ido* tres veces. I have been three times.  
Tengo *leidos* esos libros. I have read those books.  
Desde mis ventanas las *tuve cerradas* muchos días.  
Even my windows I had (or kept) closed for several  
days.

## PORTUGUESE.

## With Pronominal Verbs.

The general rule already given applies here: viz., }  
that with the verb *To have* (which would be the auxiliary used) the participle is *indeclinable*. } Same.

## With Infinitive.

## FRENCH.

The past participle followed by an infinitive, is a form where, perhaps, more mistakes are made in writing than in any other, even by well-educated Frenchmen themselves. In order to know whether the participle should vary or not, their most correct rule is—To ascertain if the *infinitive* is the *direct regimen*. If so, the participle is *unchanged*.

This last rule involves some amount of study, and is unnecessary for one who understands the English language, and who has only to be guided by the following rules :—

165. When the *infinitive* in *French* is rendered by the *past participle* in *English*, no change must be made in the French participle.

166. When the *infinitive* in *French* is rendered by the *present participle* in *English*, there must be agreement of gender and number in the *French* participle, as, in such a case, the infinitive is *not the regimen*.

*Examples.*

Les airs que j'ai *entendu chanter*.

The airs which I heard *sung*.

Les femmes que j'ai *entendues chanter*.

The women whom I heard *singing*.

## ITALIAN.

As in French, and as already seen, page 252, the infinitive is generally used after a past participle, where, in English, another participle, active or passive, would be employed.

But, *unlike* the French, the Italian past participle, accompanying the infinitive, varies only when the pronouns *la*, *le*, &c., *immediately* precede the verb *avere*, according to the rule already given (page 260.)

*Examples.*

Le romanze che ho *sentito cantare*.

The airs which I heard *sung*.

Le donne che ho *sentito cantare*.

The women whom I heard *singing*.

## With Infinitive.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

} Same.

The Spanish, in this as in all instances, adhere to the rule of making the participle invariable when employed with the verb *Haber* (to have).

} Same.

As before remarked, (page 241,) the Portuguese seldom use the preterite indefinite or compound of the present.

Where the French and others would use the verb *To have* and a past participle, the Portuguese would employ the preterite definite.

*Examples.*

La cansion que he oido cantar.  
The song which I heard sung.  
La señorita S. se ha hecho oir.  
Miss S. made herself heard.

*Example.*

*Ouvi dar-lhe pateada na opera.*  
I heard her hooted at the opera.

## FRENCH.

- Je les ai vu vaincre. I saw them conquered.  
 Je les ai vus vaincre. I saw them conquering.

*Remark.*—These examples show the complicated system adopted by the French, and how much attention is necessary in the employment of the past participle.

Leave out the *s* in the last example, and the meaning will be altogether contrary.

It may also here be noticed that the participle *fait* (made, or caused), when placed immediately before an infinitive, *never* changes.

167. When a word such as *pendant* (during) is understood before the pronoun *que* (which), the past participle } does not change. Same.

*Example.*

- Tous les jours que j'ai souffert.  
 All the days (during) which I have suffered.

## ITALIAN.

- Quelle donne ; *le ho sentite cantare.*  
 Those women ; I heard them singing.

*Remark.*—It will be seen by the second example that the Italians leave the sense to be inferred, for no one could suppose the meaning to be that the women were heard *sung*. The French, however, draw the distinction.

*Example.*

- Tutti i giorni che ho sofferto.  
 All the days (during) which I have suffered.

## Passive Verb.

168. Every verb *passive* can be made *active*, and the } contrary. Same.

169. The French, as a rule, prefer employing the verb in its *active* form.

The passive form is employed by the Italians much more frequently than by the French.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

} General rule of *Haber* and participle.      } Same.

## Passive Verb.

} Same.      } Same.

The Spanish make very frequent use of the passive form.      } Same.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

Il était guidé par la force de son génie.  
He was guided by the force of his genius.  
La force de son génie l'avait guidé.  
The force of his genius guided him.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

Io sono ingannato da lui.  
I am deceived by him.  
Egli m'ha ingannato.  
He has deceived me.

170. The passive verb is conjugated in all its tenses  
with the auxiliary *To be*. } Same, by *Essere* (Note a.)

171. The preposition which follows it is not, in French, always the same, some verbs requiring *par*, others *de*. } The preposition *Da* is most commonly used, but sometimes *per*.

## Neuter Verb.

172. This description of verb is easily known by its not admitting a direct regimen after it : for instance, the words *some one*, or *some thing*, cannot follow any of the neuter verbs mentioned below.

Most of these verbs take the auxiliary *To have* in the compound tenses. Some use the verb *To be*, such as } Same : the following with the verb *To be* :—

Aller, to go  
Arriver, to arrive  
Entrer, to come in

mourir, to die  
naître, to be born  
partir, to set out

rester, to remain  
venir, to come  
revenir, to return

Andare, to go  
Arrivare, to arrive  
Entrare, to come in

morire, to die  
nascere, to be born  
partire, to set out

restare, to remain  
venire, to come  
rivenire, to return

Note a.—The passive verb is sometimes, in lofty style, conjugated with the verb *venire*.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Es aborrecido de todos.  
He is detested by all.  
Todos le aborrecen.  
All detest him.

} Same ; by *ser*.

} The preposition *de* or *por* can be used.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Elle é amado de todos.  
He is loved by all.  
Todos o amão.  
All love him.

} Same ; by *ser*.

} The prepositions *de*, *por*, *per* are used.

## Neuter Verb.

} Same.

} The compound tenses of these verbs and of all others, except passive, are formed with *haber*; as, *ha venido*—he has come ; *ha llegado*—he has arrived, &c. : thus differing from the French and Italian.

} Same.

} The compound tenses are nearly always formed with the auxiliary *Ter*, as *tenho dormido*, I have slept.

## VERBS.

## Reflective Verb. |

## FRENCH.

173. It is necessary only to remark that, in French, the pronouns are placed *always before* the verb.

*Examples.*

Se repentir

to repent.

Je *me* repens

I repent.

## ITALIAN.

The position of the pronoun is in accordance with the rules already given.

*Examples.*

Pentirsi

to repent.

Io *mi* pento

I repent.

## Unipersonal, or Impersonal Verbs.

174. These are conjugated only in the third person singular. In the compound tenses most of them take the verb *To have*. The following are those chiefly in use :—

Il pleut	it rains.
Il tonne	it thunders.
Il éclaire	it lightens.
Il neige	it snows.
Il gèle	it freezes.
Il dégèle	it thaws.
Il grêle	it hails.
Il faut	it is necessary.
Il arrive	it happens.
Il convient	{ it becomes (or is convenient.)

Piove	it rains.
Tuona	it thunders.
Balena	it lightens.
Nevica	it snows.
Gela	it freezes.
Dighiaccia	it thaws.
Grandina	it hails.
Bisogna	it is necessary.
Accade	it happens.
Conviene	{ it becomes (or is convenient.)

## Reflective Verb.

## SPANISH.

The pronoun precedes the verb, except in the infinitive, the participle present, and the imperative.

*Examples.*

<i>Se ama</i>	he loves himself.
<i>Amarse</i>	to love one's self.

## PORTUGUESE.

Reflective verbs in Portuguese take the pronoun before or after the verb; but in the former case a nominative should be expressed.

*Examples.*

<i>Amo—me</i> , or	I love myself.
<i>Eu me amo</i>	

## Unipersonal, or Impersonal Verbs.

} Same.

} Same.

Llueve	it rains.
Truena	it thunders.
Relampaguea	it lightens.
Nieva	it snows.
Hiela	it freezes.
Deshielo	it thaws.
Graniza	it hails.
Es menester	it is necessary.
Sucede	it happens.
Conviene	{ it becomes (is convenient.)

Chove	it rains.
Troveja	it thunders.
Relampaguea	it lightens.
Neva	it snows.
Gela	it freezes.
Degela	it thaws.
Graniza	it hails.
É preciso, or precisa-se	{ it is necessary.
Succede	it happens.
Convem	{ it becomes (is convenient.)

FRENCH.		ITALIAN.	
Il importe	it matters.	Importa	it matters.
Il semble	it seems.	Sembra	it seems.
Il paraît	it appears.	Pare	it appears.
Il résulte	it results.	Risulta	it results.

### Negative Form of Conjugation.

The negative, in French, is expressed by *ne*, assisted by *pas*, or *point*; these are fully mentioned in their proper places among the *adverbs*; but it is necessary to give here their position in regard to the verb.

175. *Ne* is placed immediately after the nominative when the latter precedes the verb : *pas*, or *point* (Note *a*) follows the verb, and is placed between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses.

#### Examples.

- Je *ne* suis *pas* (or *point*).  
I am not.
- Nous *n'avons pas* parlé.  
We have not spoken.
- Je *ne l'ai pas vu.*  
I have not seen him.

In Italian, *non* is used with a verb.

*Non* always precedes the verb and any pronoun in the accusative or dative case coming before the verb.

#### Examples.

- Non* parlo.  
I do not speak.
- Non ho parlato.*  
I have not spoken.
- Non l'ho visto.*  
I have not seen him.

Note *a*.—Before the infinitive, *ne* and *pas* (or *point*) can be placed together: it is optional; as, *ne pas* or *point*—*parler*; or, *ne parler pas* (or *point*.)

	SPANISH.
Importa	it matters.
Parece {	it seems. it appears.
Resulta	it results.

	PORTEGUESE.
Importa	it matters.
Parece {	it seems. it appears.
Resulta	it results.

### Negative Form of Conjugation.

} In Spanish, *No* is used with a verb.

} Same of *No*.

- Examples.*
- No* hablo.  
*I* do not speak.  
*No* ha hablado.  
*He* has not spoken.  
*No* los hemos visto.  
*We* have not seen them.

} In Portuguese, *Não* is used.

} Same of *Não*.

- Examples.*
- Não* quero.  
*I* do not wish.  
*Não* tinha sabido.  
*He* had not known.  
*Não* lhe darei.  
*I* will not give to him.

## Interrogative Form of Conjugation.

## FRENCH.

176. The pronoun is placed immediately after the verb in simple tenses and between the auxiliary and participle in compound tenses, being always joined to one of them by a hyphen.

*Examples.*

Aimez-vous ?

Do you love ?

Avez-vous fini ?

Have you finished ?

N'a-t-il pas fini ? (Note a.)

Has he not finished ?

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, the interrogative form is usually known by the modulation of the voice in speaking, and by the note of interrogation in writing. This is partly owing to the frequent omission of the nominative pronoun ; but the rule applies also when a substantive becomes the subject of the verb.

177. When, in French, a substantive is the subject of the verb, it is usually placed first, the verb being followed by a pronoun.

*Example.*

Mon frère est-il venu ?

Has my brother come ?

*Examples.*

Che cosa volete ?

Di che avete paura ?

Vi piaccio io ?

L'uomo è arrivato ?

what do you want ?

of what are you afraid ?

do I please you ?

has the man arrived ?

Note a.—A verb ending in a vowel, and followed by any of the pronouns, *il*, *elle*, or *on*, requires the letter *t* between it and the pronoun, each connected by a hyphen, as in the last example. It must also be remarked, that in the first person singular the *e* mute is changed into *é* (accented), when followed, in interrogative sentences, by *je*; as, *aimé-je ?* (do I love ?) These rules are obviously for the sake of euphony.

## Interrogative Form of Conjugation.

SPANISH.

PORTUGUESE.

Same (Note <i>a</i> ).	}	Same.
------------------------	---	-------

*Examples.*

- ¿ Que quiere de mi ?      what do you want of me ?  
 ¿ De quien se hablan ?      of whom do they speak ?  
 ¿ Que tal tiempo hace ?      what sort of weather is it ?

*Examples.*

- Quem está ahi ?      who is there ?  
 Dormio bem ?      did you sleep well ?  
 O senhor chamou-me ?      did you call me, sir ?

Note *a*.—In Spanish, the note of interrogation is placed both at the commencement and completion of a sentence : it is inverted in the former case.

### Agreement of the Verb with its Subject.

We will give all the rules that are absolutely necessary to be acquired, and merely hint at some of the nicer distinctions of expression, observations on which belong rather to essays on composition than to a work of this description, which professes mainly to teach the ordinary grammatical construction of these languages.

It is a general rule (given in its place) that two or more substantives in the singular number, united by the conjunction *and*, require the verb to be in the plural; yet there are exceptions to this: for example—

La Bruyère writes: “*Le bien et le mal est en ses mains.*”

La Martine says: “*Le bien et le mal sont de nous et sont à nous.*

Where such seeming inconsistencies are met, we must try to discover the exact idea of the writer. In the first example the meaning is evidently—*Not only good is in his hands, but also evil;* and in the second—*Both good and evil are from us, and belong to us.*

Again, words which are synonymous are sometimes coupled by the conjunction *and*; but, as they convey no idea of plurality, the verb is placed in the singular number: for instance—*La miseria in che vive questa città e stato* (Manzoni)—The misery in which this *city and state* exists. Although the latter are two distinct nouns, (so far as words are concerned,) they mean but one object, and the verb is correctly placed in the singular number.

#### FRENCH.

178. When two or more nominatives of *different persons* are connected by the conjunction *and*, the verb } must be in the plural, and made to agree with the *first person* in preference to the others, and with the *second person* in preference to the third.

#### ITALIAN.

### Agreement of the Verb with its Subject.

So also in Spanish, (and the same in Portuguese,) two nominatives connected by the preposition *with*, frequently have the verb in the plural, and, as often, in the singular number, according to the intention of the writer : as, *El soberano con sus ministros partió ayer.* This means that the sovereign, *accompanied* by his ministers, left yesterday. The whole attention is directed towards the sovereign. If we wish to imply that the *sovereign and his ministers* left, we should put the verb in the plural (*partieron*).

These remarks are considered somewhat important, their scope being chiefly as a warning against the error of adhering too closely to a given rule, and of condemning many passages as inaccurate because some grammars superficially lay down a general rule, without, at the same time, pointing out where it may be (seemingly) departed from.

In regard to the *place* of the *subject*, we have already given its position when a *pronoun*. In other forms it frequently precedes or follows the verb, as taste may dictate ; just as, in English, it matters not whether we say, "Thus *finishes* the *story* ;" or, "Thus the *story* *finishes*." A page from a newspaper, or from any modern author, will direct the learner with greater ease and correctness than by the study of numerous rules, which, moreover, are always incomplete, and insufficient for the purpose aimed at.

The following will, however, require attention :—

SPANISH.

} Same.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Vous et moi, nous partirons bientôt* (Note a.)

You and I will leave soon.

*Vous et votre frère, vous viendrez ce soir.*

You and your brother will come this evening.

179. When several nominatives, all of the *third person*, (singular or plural,) are connected by *and*, the } verb of which they are the subjects must be, as a rule, } Same.  
in the plural, whether it precedes or follows them.

*Examples.*

*Le chien et le cheval sont utils.*

The dog and the horse are useful.

*Qu'ont reçus mon père et mon frère.*

Which my father and brother have received.

180. A verb preceded by two or more nominatives of *different persons*, connected by the conjunction *or*, must be put in the *plural* number, and agree with the } first person in preference to the others, and with the } second in preference to the third.

Note a.—It must be observed that the pronouns, *we* and *you*, which in English are *understood* in above examples, and in similar instances, are *usually*, but not *always*, *expressed* in French.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Voi ed io andremo insieme.*

You and I will go together.

*Voi e vostro fratello verrete stasera.*

You and your brother will come this evening.

*Examples.*

*L'uomo e la donna cantano bene.*

The man and the woman sing well.

*Non sono arrivati il re ed il principe.*

The king and the prince are not arrived.

## SPANISH.

## Examples.

*Tu y yo sufrimos.*

Thou and I suffer.

*Tu y él tendreis muchas casas.*

Thou and he will have many houses.

}

Same.

## Examples.

*El hombre y la muger estan hablando.*

The man and the woman are speaking.

*Han salido heridos el sastre y su esposa.*

The tailor and his wife have been wounded.

(Note a.)

}

In Spanish, each nominative should have a separate verb.

Note a.—Del Mar says, “If it (the verb) precedes the subjects, it is generally made to agree in number and person with the nearest.” His rule is incorrect, as shown in the last example : the verb should agree in precisely the same manner as if the subjects preceded the verb. He should have said that *sometimes* when two or more nominatives of different numbers follow the verb, the latter agrees with the nearest, the same verb being understood (although perhaps in a different form as regards number) for the other subjects : as, to use Mr Del Mar’s own example, *Me ha gustado mucho la novela y los poemas* (*me han*, &c., understood.)

## PORTUGUESE.

## Examples.

*Vós e eu admittimos.*

You and I admit.

*Vós e ella fallais no mesmo tempo.*

You and she speak at the same time.

}

Same.

## Examples.

*A tyrannia e a iracundia encurtão os dias do despota.*

Tyranny and anger shorten the days of a despot.

*A poesia consista na imitacão, como querem Platão e Aristoteles.*

Poetry consists in imitation, as Plato and Aristotle have it.

}

Same.

## FRENCH.

## Examples.

Vous ou moi irons. You or I will go.  
 Vous ou votre frère parlerez.  
 You or your brother will speak.

181. A verb having two or more nominatives of the  
*third person singular* connected by *or* is placed in the }  
*singular number.* Same.

## Example.

Son père ou sa mère viendra.  
 His father or mother will come.

## ITALIAN.

## Examples.

O voi *od io andremo.* You or I will go.  
 O voi *o vostro fratello parlerete.*  
 You or your brother will speak.

## Example.

Il padre o suo figlio va parlare.  
 The father or his son is going to speak.

## Agreement of the Verb with its Subject in the form of a Collective Noun or Adverb of Quantity.

182. Verbs having such for their nominatives follow as nearly as possible the same rules which obtain in English : that is, a collective noun which is *definite*, and implies one particular body or assemblage, (an army, for example,) should have the verb in the *singular number*. When the noun, or an adverb of quantity having a noun expressed or understood, supposes an *indefinite quantity*, the verb requires to be in the *plural*. We say in English : *the number of proselytes increases*; and, *a great number of people are coming*. Same in French.

In Italian, the rule differs. (Note a.)

A collective noun, whether *definite* or *indefinite*, requires the verb to be in the same number expressed by the article and noun.

The adverb of quantity does not, as in French, act the part of a substantive, but is changed into an adjective agreeing with a noun expressed or understood.

Note a.—The rule we have given can always be followed correctly ; but exceptions to it are sometimes found in the best writings ; for example, Corticelli quotes *La sua famiglia avevano un dì*, &c.—his family had one day, &c. This bears out our remark on the agreement of the verb with its subject. (Page 276.)

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

O él canta, ó canto yo. Either he sings, or I do.

O vos hablais, ó hablan ellos.

Either you speak, or they do.

} Same.

*Example.*

O él ó ella está aquí.

Either he or she is here.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Ou elle canta, ou canto eu. Either he sings, or I do.

Ou vós fallais, ou fallão elles.

Either you or they speak.

} Same.

*Example.*

Ou elle ou ella, está ahi.

Either he or she is there.

## Agreement of the Verb with its Subject in the form of a Collective Noun or Adverb of Quantity.

} Same as French.

} Same as Italian.

## VERBS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*L'armée fut mise en déroute.*

The army was routed.

*Le nombre des rebelles s'accroît.*

The number of rebels increases.

*La plupart des soldats sont malades.*

The greater part of the soldiers are ill.

*La plupart du monde le croit. (Note a.)*

The greater part of the world believes it.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*Il popolo di quel paese è ricco.*

The people of that country are rich.

*La nobiltà vegliava i suoi privilegi.*

The nobility watched over their privileges.

*Il numero di questi bravi va crescendo.*

The number of these bravos is increasing.

*La maggior parte dei convitati è venuta.*

The greater part of the guests have arrived.

*Molti vogliono parlare.*

Many (persons) wish to speak.

183. The relative pronoun, as a nominative to the verb, bears the same number and person as the noun or pronoun to which it refers. } Same.

*Examples.*

*C'est moi qui l'ai fait.*

It is I who have done it.

*L'homme qui vient.*

The man who comes.

*Examples.*

*Son io che l'ho fatto.*

It is I who have done it.

*L'uomo che viene.*

The man who comes.

Note a.—When the adverb of quantity takes after it a *plural* noun, expressed or understood, the verb is put in the plural : if the noun be in the singular, place the verb also in the same number, as shown in the last two examples.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Se *habia* reunido una numerosa *convencion*.

A numerous meeting had taken place.

El *gobierno* *ha* resuelto.

The government have (or has) resolved.

El *consejo* de ministros *ha* tomado *resoluciones*.

The council of ministers have made resolutions.

Un gran *numero* de soldados *fueron* apresados.

A large number of soldiers were taken prisoners.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

A *capital* inteira o *tem* visitado.

The entire capital have visited him.

A *população* *esteve* toda a noite despertada.

The population kept awake all night.

A *concurrencia* das visitas *tem* sido numerosa.

The number of visits was numerous.

Quando os *povos* *houverem* conhecido.

When the people had known.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Soy *yo que* lo *declaro*.

It is I who declare it.

El *hombre que* *viene*.

The man who comes.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Sou *eu que* o *digo*.

It is I who say it.

O *homem que* *falla*.

The man who speaks.

**ADVERBS.**

The following list of Adverbs we give chiefly for the use of those who are studying more than one of these languages. The comparison will be found of great assistance, on reference, and will save the necessity of applying

**Of Time.****ENGLISH.**

After ; afterwards.  
again ; another time.  
already.  
always ; ever.  
before.  
early.  
formerly.  
frequently.  
hardly.  
hitherto.  
last night.  
late.  
lately.  
long since.  
meanwhile.  
never.  
now.  
often.  
presently ; soon.  
quickly.  
recently.  
seldom.

**FRENCH.**

Après.  
de nouveau.  
déjà.  
toujours.  
avant ; auparavant.  
de bonne heure.  
autrefois.  
fréquemment.  
à peine.  
jusqu'à présent.  
la nuit dernière  
tard.  
dernièrement.  
depuis longtemps.  
en attendant.  
jamais.  
à présent.  
souvent.  
bientôt.  
vite.  
récemment.  
rarement.

**ITALIAN.**

Dopo.  
di nuovo.  
già.  
sempre.  
dinanzi ; prima.  
di buon'ora.  
anteriormente.  
frequentemente.  
appena.  
fin 'ora.  
jernotte.  
tardo.  
poco fa.  
molto fa.  
frattanto  
mai.  
adesso.  
molte, or spesse volte.  
subito.  
presto.  
di fresco.  
rare volte.

to dictionaries. Each separate classification is, in English, arranged alphabetically.

### Of Time.

#### SPANISH.

Despues.  
de nuevo ; otra vez.  
ya.  
siempre.  
antes.  
temprano.  
anteriormente.  
frequentemente.  
apenas.  
hasta aqui.  
anoche.  
tarde.  
poco ha.  
mucho ha.  
entretanto.  
jamás ; nunca.  
ahora.  
muchas veces.  
luego.  
presto.  
recientemente.  
rara vez.

#### PORTUGUESE.

Depois.  
novamente ; outra vez.  
já.  
sempre.  
antes.  
cedo.  
antigamente.  
frequentemente.  
apenas.  
até aqui.  
a noite passada.  
tarde.  
ha pouco tempo.  
muito tempo ha.  
entretanto.  
nunca.  
agora.  
muitas vezes.  
logo.  
presto.  
recentemente.  
raramente.

## ADVERBS.

Of Time—*continued.*

ENGLISH.

shortly.  
since.  
sometimes.  
soon.  
then.  
till ; until.  
to-day.  
to-morrow.  
when.  
whilst.  
yesterday.  
yet.

FRENCH.

bientôt.  
depuis.  
quelquefois.  
bientôt.  
alors.  
jusque.  
aujourd 'hui.  
demain.  
quand.  
pendant.  
hier.  
encore.

ITALIAN.

fra poco.  
dopo.  
qualche volta.  
tosto ; subito.  
allora.  
fino ; sino.  
oggi.  
domani.  
quando.  
mentre.  
ieri.  
ancora.

## Of Place.

Above.  
adjoining ; next.  
around.  
aside.  
backwards.  
before.  
behind  
below.  
by the side.  
facing.

En haut ; dessus.  
auprès.  
alentour.  
de côté ; à part.  
en arrière.  
devant.  
derrière.  
en bas ; dessous.  
à côté.  
en face.

Sopra.  
vicino.  
intorno.  
a parte.  
indietro.  
avanti.  
dietro.  
abasso ; di sotto.  
da lato.  
in faccia.

Of Time—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

en breve.  
desde.  
algunas veces.  
pronto.  
entonces.  
hasta.  
hoy.  
mañana.  
cuando.  
mientras.  
ayer.  
aun ; todavía.

## PORTUGUESE.

brevemente.  
desde.  
algumas vezes.  
cedo.  
então.  
até.  
hoje.  
manhã.  
quando.  
durante.  
hontem.  
ainda ; todavía.

## Of Place.

Arriba.  
junto.  
alrededor.  
aparte.  
hacia atras.  
delante.  
detras.  
abajo.  
al lado.  
en frente.

Arriba.  
junto.  
ao redor.  
á parte.  
detrás.  
diante.  
atrás.  
em baixo.  
ao lado.  
em face.

## ADVERBS.

Of Place—*continued.*

ENGLISH.

far.  
forwards.  
hence.  
here.  
hither.  
near ; about.  
out.  
there ; thither.  
towards.  
where.  
within.  
without.

FRENCH.

loin.  
en avant.  
d'ici.  
ici.  
par ici.  
à peu près.  
dehors.  
là ; par là.  
vers.  
où.  
en dedans.  
en dehors.

ITALIAN.

lungo.  
avanti.  
di quà.  
qui ; quà.  
di quà.  
circa.  
di fuori.  
li ; là ; di là.  
verso.  
dove.  
dentro.  
fuori ; di fuori.

## Of Order.

After.  
at last.  
at the end.  
before.  
finally.  
firstly.  
lastly.  
next.  
on the contrary.

Après.  
enfin.  
à la fin.  
avant.  
finalement.  
premièrement.  
en dernier lieu.  
en suite.  
au contraire.

Dopo.  
in fine.  
alla fine.  
avanti.  
finalmente.  
primieramente.  
ultimamente.  
in seguito.  
al contrario ; anzi.

Of Place—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

lejos.  
hacia adelante.  
de aqui.  
aqui.  
acá.  
cerca.  
fuera.  
ahi ; allí ; de allí.  
hacia.  
donde.  
dentro.  
por fuera.

## PORTUGUESE.

longe.  
em diante.  
d'aqui.  
aqui.  
ça.  
cerca ; perto.  
fóra.  
ahi ; alli.  
perto.  
onde.  
dentro.  
fóra.

## Of Order.

Despues.  
por ultimo.  
al fin.  
antes.  
finalmente.  
primeramente.  
ultimamente.  
en seguida.  
al contrario.

Depois.  
por fim.  
ao fim.  
antes.  
finalmente.  
primeiramente.  
ultimamente.  
depois.  
pelo contrario

## ADVERBS.

Of Order—*continued.*

ENGLISH.

secondly.  
thirdly.  
together.  
topsy-turvy.

FRENCH.

secondement.  
troisièmement.  
ensemble.  
sens dessus dessous.

ITALIAN.

in secondo luogo  
in terzo luogo.  
insieme.  
sotto sopra.

## Of Quality and Comparison.

All.  
almost.  
better.  
besides ; moreover.  
enough.  
how much.  
less.  
little.  
more.  
much.  
partly.  
rather.  
scarcely.  
so.  
so much.  
too much ; too.

Tout.  
presque ; quasi.  
mieux.  
de plus.  
assez.  
combien.  
moins.  
peu.  
plus.  
beaucoup.  
en partie.  
plutôt.  
à peine.  
si.  
tant.  
de trop ; trop.

Tutto.  
quasi.  
meglio.  
di più.  
bastante.  
quanto.  
meno.  
poco.  
più.  
molto.  
in parte.  
piuttosto.  
apena.  
così.  
tanto.  
troppo.

Of Order—*continued.*

SPANISH.  
segundamente.  
terceramente.  
juntamente.  
al revés.

PORtUGUESE.  
em segundo lugar  
em terceiro lugar.  
juntamente.  
ao revez.

## Of Quality and Comparison.

Todo.  
casi.  
mejor.  
ademas.  
bastante.  
cuanto.  
ménos.  
poco.  
mas.  
mucho.  
en parte.  
antes bien.  
apénas.  
tan ; asi.  
tanto.  
demasiado.

Todo.  
quasi.  
melhor.  
de mais ; alem.  
bastante.  
quanto.  
menos.  
pouco.  
mais.  
muito.  
em parte.  
antes.  
apenas.  
tão ; assim.  
tanto.  
demasiado.

## ADVERBS.

Of Quality and Comparison—*continued.*

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
very.	très.	molto.
well.	bien.	bene.
worse.	pis.	peggio.

## Of Doubt.

Perhaps.	Peut-être.	Forse.
----------	------------	--------

## Of Affirmation and Negation.

Also ; too.	Aussi.	Anche.
by no means.	point du tout.	in nessuna maniera.
certainly.	certainement.	certamente.
even.	même.	anche.
indeed.	vraiment.	davvero.
neither ; not even.	non plus.	nemmeno.
no.	non ; non pas (or point).	no.
nothing.	rien ; nullement.	niente.
truly.	certes.	certo.
undoubtedly.	sans doute.	senza dubbio.
yes.	oui.	si.

Of Quality and Comparison—*continued.*

## SPANISH.

muy.  
bien.  
peor.

## PORTUGUESE.

muito.  
bem.  
peor.

## Of Doubt.

Quizá ; acaso.

Talvez ; pode ser.

## Of Affirmation and Negation.

Tambien.  
de ningun modo.  
ciertamente.  
aun.  
de veras ; verdaderamente.  
tampoco.  
no.  
nada.  
cierto.  
indubitablemente.  
si.

Tambem.  
de nenhum modo.  
certamente.  
ainda.  
na verdade ; verdadeiramente.  
nem.  
não.  
nada.  
certo.  
indubitavelmente.  
sim.

## Formation from Adjectives.

## FRENCH.

Many adverbs, in French, are formed by the addition of *ment* to the adjective, in the following manner :—

184. Adjectives ending in a *vowel* in the *masculine* add *ment*; as, *Rare*, *rarement*; *vrai*; *vraiment*: except *beau*, *fou*, *mou*, *nouveau*, which add *ment* to the *feminine*; as, *Bellement*, *follement*, *mollement*, *nouvellement*.

*Note.*—A few in *e mute* are accented; as,  
Conforme                   conformément.

185. Adjectives ending in a *consonant* in the *masculine* form the adverb by adding *ment* to the *feminine* termination; as,

*Naturel* (masc.), *naturelle* (fem.); adv., *naturellement*;  
except—*Gentil*, which makes *gentiment*;

*Précis*,               ",           *précisément*,  
(accenting fem. *e*) and a few others; also,

Adjectives ending in *ant* and *ent*, which, with few exceptions, change *nt* into *mment*; as,

Constant                   constamment.

## ITALIAN.

In Italian, many adverbs are formed as follows :—

Add *mente* to the *feminine* termination of the adjective; as,

*Pieno* (masc.), *piena* (fem.); adv., *pienamente*.  
*Eminente* (masc. and fem.); adv., *eminentemente*.

*Except*—

Adjectives ending in *re* and *le*, preceded by a vowel, which suppress the last *e* when adding *mente*; as,

<i>Familiare</i>	<i>familiarmente</i> .
<i>Debole</i>	<i>debolmente</i> .

*Note.*—The superlative of adverbs may be formed by the addition of *issimamente* to the last *consonant* of the adjective; as,

<i>Savio</i>	wise.
<i>Savissimamente</i>	most wisely.

## Formation from Adjectives.

## SPANISH.

In Spanish, add *mente*, as in Italian, to the *feminine* } Same (Note a.) : as,  
termination of adjectives : as,

<i>Serio</i> , m.	<i>seria</i> , f.	<i>seriamente</i> , adv.
<i>Sabio</i> , m.	<i>sabia</i> , f.	<i>sabiamente</i> , adv.
<i>Elegante</i> , m. and f.		<i>elegantemente</i> , adv.

## PORTUGUESE.

<i>Serio</i> , m.	<i>Seria</i> , f.	<i>Seriamente</i> , adv.
<i>Sabio</i> , m.	<i>Sabia</i> , f.	<i>Sabiamente</i> , adv.
	<i>Feliz</i> , m. and f.	<i>Felizmente</i> , adv.

When more than one of these adverbs (in English) }  
are used together in a sentence, the last alone takes the }  
adverbial form of *mente*, but the adjective retains the }  
feminine termination.

*Example.*

Habló *seria*, *sabia* y *elegantemente*.  
He spoke seriously, wisely, and elegantly.

*Example.*

Resignou-se *philosophica* e *sabiamente* ao seu destino.  
He resigned himself philosophically and wisely to his  
destiny.

*Note*.—The superlative of adverbs may be formed } Same by *issimamente* : as  
by the addition of *isimamente* : as

<i>Elegante</i>	elegant.
<i>Elegantissimamente</i>	most elegantly

<i>Elegante</i>	elegant.
<i>Elegantissimamente</i>	most elegantly.

*Note a*.—The adverb *commummente* is formed by the addition of *mente* to the *masculine* termination of the adjective, instead of to the feminine.

## ADVERBS.

## Place of the Adverb.

## FRENCH.

186. This almost entirely depends upon taste, and cannot reasonably be subjected to rule.

After a very slight acquaintance with any language,  
the ear alone will nearly suffice to direct the position of  
the adverb.

## ITALIAN.

Same.

## Affirmative.

187. The expression of an *affirmative*, in the following manner, differs from the Italian, and accords with the Spanish and Portuguese languages

*Example.*

Je crois *que oui*. I think so.

*Note*.—The French use the conjunction *Que*.

In Italian thus :—

*Example.*

To credo *di si* I think so.

*Note*.—The Italians use the preposition *Di*.

## Negatives.

188. The *negative* in French being composed of three particles, *ne* and *pas* or *point* and *non*, differs entirely from that of the other languages : its application will be easily apprehended by the following examples and by some remarks which come after.

The negative in Italian, *no* or *non*, is easily acquired.

## Place of the Adverb.

SPANISH.

} Same.

PORTUGUESE.

} Same.

## Affirmative.

} As in French.

} Same.

*Example.*Yo digo *que sí*

I say yes.

*Note.*—The Spanish use the conjunction *que*.*Example.*Eu digo *que sim*

I say yes.

Same.

## Negatives.

} *No* is the Spanish negative, although it does not  
always convey a negative meaning.

} Same of *Não* (*Note a.*)

*Note a.*—*Não* was formerly written *nam*.

## ADVERBS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

*Je crois que non.*

I think not.

*Êtes-vous malade ? Non.*

Are you ill ? No.

*Non, je ne veux pas.*

No, I do not wish.

*Je n'ai pas beaucoup de fortune.*

I am not very rich.

*Je n'ai point de fortune.*

I have no money.

*Il ne vient jamais.*

He never comes.

*Je ne vois rien.*

I see nothing.

*Je n'ai pas parlé.*

I have not spoken.

*Il ne parle qu'à vous.*

He speaks only to you

*Pour ne pas (or point) venir ; or*

*Pour ne venir pas (or point).*

In order not to come.

*Je crains qu'il ne soit malade.*

I fear he is ill.

*Remarks.*—*Non* is used when isolated, and without } *No*, in like manner.  
a verb.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

*No, non voglio.*

No, I do not wish.

*Non avete il ventaglio ?*

Have you not the fan ?

*Perchè non viene ?*

Why does he not come ?

*Voi non me lo avete negato.*

You have not denied it to me.

*Temo che non sia già morto.*

I fear that he is already dead.

*L' avete visto ? Mai.*

Have you seen him ? Never.

*Non l'ho mai visto.*

I have never seen him.

## ADVERBS.

299

### SPANISH.

#### Examples.

*No, no quiero.*

No, I do not wish.

*No tengo carne.*

I have no meat.

*En caso de que ya no tenga dinero.*

In case he should no longer have any money.

*No, he hablado.*

I have not spoken.

*Mejor es la sabiduria que no la riqueza.*

Wisdom is better than wealth.

*Nunca } ví tal hombre.*

*Jamas }*

I never saw such a man.

### PORTUGUESE.

#### Examples.

*Não quero.*

I do not wish.

*Por que não toma alguma cousa?*

Why do you not take something.

*Esses risos não custão lagrimas a ninguem.*

This laughter does not cost tears to any one.

*Não levo senão uma maleta.*

I carry only a small portmanteu.

*Ainda que não seja senão para me dar animo.*

If it is only to give me courage.

} *No, in like manner.*

} *Não in like manner.*

## ADVERBS.

## FRENCH.

In simple tenses, *ne* is placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point* (Note a) immediately after : in compound tenses, *pas* or *point* goes between the auxiliary and the verb.

With an infinitive it is optional to place the verb between *ne* and *pas* or *point*, or after *both* the negatives.

When one of the words, *rien*, *jamais*, *personne*, *plus*, *guère*, *aucun*, *nul*, *nullement*, forms part of a sentence, *pas* or *point* is suppressed.

After the verbs *croire*, *avoir peur*, and a few others expressing fear or danger, *ne* is frequently used without a negative meaning, in reference to the verb which follows.

## ITALIAN.

*Non* always precedes the verb, and the personal pronoun in oblique cases.

*Mai* and *giammai* mean *never* in answer to a question, but, when employed with a verb in the sense of *never*, they require the accompaniment of a negative, without which the meaning would be *ever*.

After verbs of fearing, doubting, &c., the particle is sometimes used, as in French, without giving a negative meaning to the verb which follows. This phraseology is, however, not so common in Italian.

## Observations on various Adverbs.

*Beaucoup*; *bien*; *très*.

The first, when expressing the word *much*, used adjectively in English, resembles a noun in French. and requires after it the preposition *de*; as,

*Beaucoup d'argent*      much money.

*Molto*, *poco*, and a few other adverbs, are frequently used as adjectives, agreeing in gender and number with their nouns; as,

*Molte persone*      many persons.

Note a.—The difference between *pas* and *point* is that the latter marks a negative more fully, where no doubt whatever exists and a certainty is expressed ; as, (in addition to above examples,) Je ne suis *point* Anglais—I am *not* English. The same can also be expressed with *pas*, which can *always* be correctly used, although sometimes not so emphatically as *point*.

## ADVERBS.

301

### SPANISH.

} Same of *No*.

} *Nunca* and *jamas* mean *never*, and do not require the negative *no*: *jamas* is sometimes used to express *ever*.

} Same.

### PORTEGUESE.

} Same of *Não*.

} Same of *nunca* and *jamais*.

} Same.

### Observations on various Adverbs.

} Same of *mucho*, *poco*, &c.; as,

*Muchas cosas*

many things.

} Same of *muito*, *pouco*, &c.; as,

*Muitas cousas*

many things.

## ADVERBS.

## FRENCH.

*Bien*, in the sense of *very*, when modifying another adverb or an adjective, differs from *très* in being less energetic.

*Plutôt, rather*, must not be confounded with *plus tôt, sooner*; the first conveys the idea of *choice*, the latter of *time*.

*Davantage* means *more*, but is generally used at the end of a phrase; it cannot, like *plus* (*more*) take *de* or *que* after it; as *plus de monde*. The manner of employment is thus:

Le fils est riche, mais le père l'est *davantage*  
The son is rich, but the father is more so.

## ITALIAN.

They are also employed as substantives; as—  
Il *poco e buono* è molto meglio che il *molto e cattivo*.  
Little and good is much better than much and bad.

*Anzi* is an adverb very often used in conversation when answering a question; thus—

Non vuole ch'io entri?  
Do you not wish me to come in?

*Anzi, lo voglio.*  
On the contrary, I wish it.

*Anzi che no* means *rather*; as—  
Ella è *anzi che no* bellina.  
She is rather pretty.

## SPANISH.

Same ; as,

*Su mucho, su poco*      his much, his little.

*Demas* and *ademas*. The first expresses *over and above, the rest, remaining*; as,

*Lo demas*      the rest, or what remains.

*Ademas* means *moreover, besides*; as,

*Ademas de esto*      besides this.

*Ademas, no lo quiero*      moreover, I do not wish it.

## PORTUGUESE.

Same ; as,

*O pouco basta ao moderado; o muito não basta ao prodigo.*

Little suffices for the moderate; much is not enough for the prodigal.

*Nada*, like its equivalents in other languages, is sometimes used substantively, as *o nada*; it is also found (but rarely) in a plural form, *Nadas*.

## PREPOSITIONS.

We give a list of nearly all the simple prepositions, but will depart from the usual custom of pointing out that *this one* denotes *subordination*, *that conjunction*, the other indicates *object*, *tendency*, &c., &c., &c. It will be more to the purpose to show their actual and most common use, by giving examples sufficiently copious, and by afterwards adding a few necessary observations. The examples will also show that most of the prepositions convey a variety of meaning, differing according to the words by which they are accompanied: for instance, the

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.
At, to, &c.	À.	A.
of, with, from, &c.	de.	di.
in, into, within.	en, dans.	in, dentro.
with.	avec, chez.	con, presso.
after.	après.	dopo.
before.	avant, devant.	prima, davanti.
without.	sans.	senza.
against.	contre.	contra.
since, as soon as.	depuis, dès.	dopo, fino.
between.	entre.	fra.
towards.	vers, envers.	verso.
for, in order to.	pour.	per.
by, through.	par.	da, per.
according to.	selon.	secondo.
on, upon.	sur.	sopra, su, in su
under.	sous.	sotto.
amongst.	parmi.	fra, in mezzo.
till, until.	jusqu'à.	sino.

first on the list, à, means *at*, *to*, *in*, &c., and is frequently used (as in the second example, French) where *no* preposition is expressed in English. Again, we cannot always translate literally the meaning according to the equivalent given in the list: for example, à quoi pensez-vous? (*Of what are you thinking?*) We could not say *to* what, or *at* what are you thinking? Sufficient proof is given that *practice in reading* will be found the only successful means of ensuring the *correct* employment of prepositions.

## SPANISH.

Á.	
de.	
en, dentro.	
con.	
después.	
ante, delante.	
sin.	
contra.	
desde.	
entre.	
hacia.	
para.	
por.	
según.	
sobre, encima.	
bajo.	
entre, in medio de.	
hasta.	

## PORTUGUESE.

A (Note a.)	
de.	
em, dentro.	
com.	
depois.	
antes, diante.	
sem.	
contra.	
desde.	
entre.	
até, para.	
para.	
por, per.	
segundo.	
sobre, em cima.	
sob, { abaixo, or	debaixo, or
{ abaxo.	debaxo.
entre	
até.	

Note a.—The preposition *a* is without an accent, like that in Italian. Á (accented) is a combination of the preposition and definite article, feminine gender.

## PREPOSITIONS.

## FRENCH.

*Examples.*

Le lendemain j'étais *à* Paris.

The next day I was *in* Paris.

Il ressemble *à* un baptistère creusé *à* la porte *d'une* cathédrale.

It resembles a baptistery cut out at the door of a cathedral.

Je m'attendais *à* voir.

I waited to see.

Quelques femmes voilées *de* leurs mantilles.

Some women veiled *with* (or by) their mantles.

Le ciel *de* Provence a reparu.

The sky of Provence has reappeared.

Je l'ai vu se promener *de* cime *en* cime.

I saw him walk from summit to summit.

Ce qui vient *de* m'arriver.

That which has just happened to me.

Les gens qui m'accompagnaient *en* Grèce, *en* Italie.

The people who accompanied me *in* Greece, and *in* Italy.

*Dans* ces lieux on respire.

In these places, one breathes.

Je pénétrai *dans* l'intérieur.

I penetrated into the interior.

Il est *avec* son père.

He is with his father.

## ITALIAN.

*Examples.*

A quel ch'io vedo.

From what I see.

Chi vi obbliga *a* farlo?

Who obliges you to do it?

Io credo *a* fatti non *a* parole.

I believe *in* deeds not words.

Ho speranza *di* rivedervi.

I hope to see you again.

Voi lo farete più facilmente *di* me.

You will do it more easily than I.

Signor, che vi è accaduto *di* male?

Sir, what evil has happened to you?

Lo vedo *in* pericolo.

I see him in danger.

Che fate qui *in* questa camera?

What are you doing in this room?

Cercatene la cagione *dentro* *di* voi.

Seek the reason within yourself.

L'amo *con* tutto il cuore.

I love her with all my heart.

Presso gli antichi.

Among the ancients.

Dopo un anno, dopo sei mesi.

After a year, after six months.

## SPANISH.

*Examples.*

Fuéreron á pasearse.  
They went to walk.  
Parámonos á la puerta.  
We stopped at the door.  
Me fué preciso seguir á Don Luis.  
It was necessary that I should follow Don Lewis.  
El cuidado *de* los amigos.  
The care of the friends.  
Yo, *de* buena gana.  
I, with good will.  
Es un hombre *de* tono decisivo.  
He is a man of a decisive tone.  
Es una obra *en* prosa.  
It is a work in prose.  
Me hizo montar *en* su caballo.  
He made me mount his horse.  
Andaba considerando *dentro de* si.  
He was considering within himself.  
*Con* singular atención.  
With singular attention.  
Está casado *con* la viuda.  
He is married to the widow.  
*Después de* esta aventura  
After this adventure.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Examples.*

Irei *a* Paris.  
I will go to Paris.  
Montar *a* cavalo.  
To mount a horse.  
Dirijo una copia *d'esta* carta *á* S. A., presidente *do* conselho, e  ministros *do* interior e  finanças.  
I address a copy of this letter to his highness, president of the Council, and to the ministers of the interior and of finance.  
A estrada é bordada *de* precipícios.  
The road is bordered with precipices.  
Venho *de* Londres.  
I come from London.  
*Em* vosso despacho *de* 4 *de* Maio.  
In your dispatch of the 4th May.  
*Em* Paris ; *no* Porto.  
In Paris ; in Oporto.  
*Com* as informações precisas.  
With the precise information.  
*Com* vossas luzes e *com* o conhecimento.  
With your intelligence and with the knowledge.  
*Depois de* lavrado o termo  
After the time expires.

## PREPOSITIONS.

## FRENCH.

*Chez* les Romains.  
 Among the Romans.  
*Après* avoir traversé le désert.  
 After having crossed the desert.  
*Avant* la naissance *du* Christ.  
 Before the birth of Christ.  
 Je me suis arrêté *devant* la porte.  
 I stopped before the gate.  
*Sans* rencontrer personne.  
 Without meeting any one.  
 Il est *sans* famille.  
 He is without a family.  
 Il presse le pied *contre* la barrière.  
 He presses his foot against the barrier.  
 Il le tient *entre* ses bras.  
 He holds him *within* his arms.  
 Il passe *entre* la maison et la rue.  
 He passes between the house and the street.  
 Je descends *vers* le pont.  
 I descend towards the bridge.  
 Son amour *envers* moi.  
 His love towards me.  
 Elle est préparée *pour* le voyage.  
 She is prepared for the voyage.  
 Personne ne s'arrête *pour* l'écouter.  
 No one stops to listen to him.

## ITALIAN.

Lo vorreste *prima di* partire ?  
 Would you wish it before leaving ?  
*Davanti* al re.  
 Before the king.  
 Alcuni mesi *davanti*.  
 Some months before.  
 Posso partire *senza* disperarmi ?  
 Can I leave without despairing ?  
 Ritorna *in* Francia *senza di* me.  
 He returns to France without me.  
 Ha peccato *contra* qualche potente.  
 He has sinned against some powerful person.  
 Mi tiene sospeso *fra* due giudizi.  
 He holds me in suspense between two opinions.  
 Io vado *verso* Salamanca.  
 I go towards Salamanca.  
 Verrà *verso* le tre.  
 He will come about three o'clock.  
 Per un anno almeno.  
 For one year at least.  
 Per dir così.  
 To speak thus.  
 Per gli occhi, e *per* le orecchie.  
 Through the eyes and ears.  
 Avete *da* mangiare ?  
 Have you anything to eat ?

## SPANISH.

Poco *antes* de comer.  
 A little before dinner.  
*Ante, delante* (or) *en presencia* del rey.  
 Before the king.  
 Ella es *sin igual* en hermosura.  
 She is unequalled in beauty.  
 Pero, no *sin* decirlo.  
 But, not without saying it.  
 El hermano se rebeló *contra* él.  
 The brother rebelled against him.  
 Pero, para *entre* los dos.  
 But, between us two.  
 Si conservas todavía algún amor *hacia* mí.  
 If thou preservest still some love towards me.  
*Por* la tarde, mientras se disponian *para* ir á casa de mi  
 padre.  
 In the evening while they were preparing to go to my  
 father's house.  
 Ni aun le pasó *por* el pensamiento.  
 Nor indeed did it pass through his thoughts.  
*Para* enterarme del motivo.  
 In order to inform me of the motive.  
*Según* sus propias ideas.  
 According to his own ideas.  
*Encima* (or) *sobre* la mesa.  
 Upon the table.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Para* irem *diante* do hiate imperial.  
 To go before the imperial yacht.  
*Antes da* revolução.  
 Before the revolution.  
*Sem* caução ou fiança.  
 Without caution or security.  
*Sem* mais nem menos.  
 Without more or less (or nevertheless.)  
*Contra* a dependencia *da* Côrte.  
 Against the dependence of the Court.  
*Entre* duas mesas.  
 Between two tables.  
*Entre* Paris e Londres.  
 Between Paris and London.  
*Para* o fim *do* mes.  
 Towards the end of the month.  
 Se se perderem *por* desastre.  
 If they should be lost through accident.  
 Serão prestados *pelo* ministerio.  
 They will be lent by the ministry.  
*Segundo* nos foi referido.  
 According as it was related to us.  
*Sobre* a terra.  
 Upon the earth.  
 Insistir *sobre* a rigorosa execução.  
 To insist upon the rigorous execution.

## FRENCH.

Ils reparaissent *par* enchantement.  
 They reappear by enchantment.  
 Il parle *selon* sa volonté.  
 He speaks according to his will.  
 La couronne *sur* la tête.  
 The crown upon the head.  
 Le monument qui est *sur* la place.  
 The monument which is *in* the square.  
*Sous* un autre ciel.  
 Under another sky.  
*Jusqu'à* son arrivée.  
 Until his arrival.  
*Depuis* plusieurs semaines.  
 Since several weeks.  
*Dès* que le soleil baisse.  
 Soon as the sun descends.

## ITALIAN.

La virtù è rispettata *da* noi.  
 Virtue is respected by us.  
*Secondo* la stagione.  
 According to the season.  
*Sopra* la tavola.  
 Upon the table.  
 Parleremo *sopra* l'affare.  
 We will talk about the matter.  
*Su* la cima d'un poggio.  
 On the summit of a cliff.  
*Sotto* il cui governo.  
 Under whose government.  
 Stateci *sino* (or *fino*) domani.  
 Stay here until to-morrow.  
*Fino* dai primi suoi anni.  
 Since his earliest years.

## Remarks on various Prepositions.

The preceding examples, while showing how most of  
 the prepositions are employed, serve also to illustrate } Same.  
 the following observations :—

*En*; *dans*.—The difference between these two consists in the former being employed before nouns of an indefinite or general signification, and the latter before those in a determinate sense. It may also be remarked that a difference exists

*A.*.—This preposition, in Italian, has no accent.

*Per*.—has several significations, and is almost equivalent to the two prepositions in French, *pour* and *par*.

## SPANISH.

Hizo que la conversacion recayese *sobre* su familia.  
He managed that the conversation should again fall  
on his family.

*Bajo* el nombre de don Enrique.

Under the name of Henry.

No podia estar compuesto *hasta* el dia siguiente.

It could not be repaired until the following day.

*Desde que* le ví.

Since I saw him.

## PORTUGUESE.

Voltaram-se pois os olhos *para* o sitio *por* onde deveria  
entrar, como *para* mais fixarem a attenção.

Then all eyes were turned towards the place by which  
she should enter, as if in order to fix more the  
attention.

*Debaixo da* mesa.

Under the table.

*Até que chegarão ao* paço imperial.

Until they arrived at the imperial court.

*Desde que* foi anunciado.

Soon as it was announced.

## Remarks on various Prepositions.

} Same.

Á.—Besides the many different meanings conveyed  
by this preposition, one peculiarity should be  
especially pointed out. A *personal noun* in the  
*accusative* case nearly always takes á before it;  
as, Seguir á *Don Luis*—to follow Don Lewis.

} Same.

A.—The Portuguese use this preposition in the same  
manner as the Spaniards—that is, with a *personal noun*, and sometimes with other nouns, in  
the accusative case. See the remarks on the  
Spanish á: they equally apply here.

## PREPOSITIONS.

## FRENCH.

between the meaning of *en campagne*, which signifies *campaigning* (as of troops), and *à la campagne*, being *in the country*.

*Avant*; *devant*.—Both of these prepositions mean *before*: the distinction is that *avant* has reference to *time*, and *devant* to *place*.

*Vers*; *envers*.—The former is used before nouns indicating time or place: the latter means, *in respect to*.

## ITALIAN.

*Da*—is also employed in several different ways. Like the French word *chez* it is sometimes used with a personal pronoun to signify habitation or residence: as, *da me*, *da noi*, to my house, to our house. But this mode of expression requires care; it should only be employed when the person denoted by the pronoun may be supposed in the house at the time of a call, for instance—Venite *da me*, means, Come to my house; but Io vado *da me*, means, I am going by myself (of my own accord.) Non è in casa, properly expresses, He is not at home.

## Place of the Preposition.

189. This is nearly always *immediately* before its object, thus differing from the English language, where } Same.  
both are frequently separated.

## SPANISH.

*A visitar á mi padre*—to visit my father. If in the sentence there should be another *personal noun* of the same number, but of the *dative case*, that in the *accusative* dispenses with the preposition ; as, *Enviamos el caballero al juez*—we send the gentleman to the judge.

The method of placing *á* before an accusative is to do away with any ambiguity ; for, in the Spanish language, the nominative frequently follows the verb, while an accusative goes before. For this reason the use of the preposition is sometimes required also with nouns *not personal* ; as, *Á la vid abrigó la encina*—(oak.) Without *á* the meaning would be that the vine sheltered the oak.

*En* with *cuanto* expresses *with regard to*.

*Con* preceded by *para* signifies *towards* ; as,

Es muy amable *para con* todos.

He is very amiable towards all.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Para* before *com* means *towards*, as in Spanish.  
*Por* and *per*.—The first is employed in a variety of ways, and corresponds with the French *par* and *pour*, and with the Spanish *por*. *Per* is principally used with the definite article, as *Pelo, pela* (by the), instead of *per o, per a*.

*Abaixo* and *debaixo*.—The first means *below* ; it also implies *inferiority* ; as,

*Está abaixo de mim.*

He is under, or inferior to me.

*Debaixo* refers to time and place ; as,

*Debaixo do imperio romano.*

Under the Roman empire.

*Debaixo da mesa.*

Under the table.

*Antes* and *diante*.—The first refers to time, *diante* to place.

## Place of the Preposition.

{ Same.

{ Same.

(Loud applause.)

## PREPOSITIONS.

FRENCH.

*Example.*

À quoi pensez-vous ?

What are you thinking about ?

ITALIAN.

*Example.*I suoi affari sono *in* disordine.

His affairs are in disorder.

## Repetition.

190. The prepositions *à*, *de*, and *en* should always be repeated before each object where there are many in the same sentence.

} Same of *a*, *di*, *in*, *da*, *per*.

*Example.*

Il les pria de venir à la maison s'entretenir avec l'étranger *de* ses conjectures, *de* ses intentions, et *de* ses plans.

He begged them to come to the house and talk with the stranger about his conjectures, intentions, and plans.

*Example.*

*Per* educazione, *per* interesse, *per* consuetudine, *per* imitazione, ne avevano abbracciate le massime.

They had embraced those maxims through education, interest, habit, and imitation.

## SPANISH.

*Example.*

*Es una obra en prosa.*

It is a work in prose.

## PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*

*Perto das nove horas.*

Nine o'clock about.

## Repetition.

In Spanish it is not necessary (as in French and Italian) to repeat the preposition : much is left to taste, as in English. If to avoid ambiguity, a repetition should, of course, be made.

*Examples.*

Tambien se hace mención *de sus bienes, de sus costumbres.*

Also, mention is made of their possessions and habits.

En este mundo *de miserias y afflictiones.*

In this world of miseries and of afflictions.

} Same.

*Examples.*

Os ministros *do interior e das finanças.*

The ministers of the interior and finance.

*Sem caução e fiança.*

Without caution and security.

Of *conjunctions* and *conjunctive expressions* we will not attempt a list. Any dictionary gives the equivalent of every *simple conjunction*, and all the rest belong to that varied idiomatic phraseology, to teach which is far beyond the scope of any grammar on foreign languages. There will be no practical utility in talking about *conjunctions causative*, *conjunctions adversative*, &c. &c., and in classifying such, with a host of others, in formidable

## FRENCH.

191. The conjunctions *et* (and), *ou* (or), may be repeated or not before each object according to taste, as in English. Sometimes they may be altogether left out of the sentence.

*Examples.*

La calomnie, l'incrédulité, le reproche l'accueillirent à Cadiz.

Calumny, incredulity, reproach received him in Cadiz.

Le respect *ou* l'amour.

Either respect or love.

*Note.*—This last example can with equal correctness be rendered—*Ou* le respect *ou* l'amour.

192. *Ni* (nor), employed in negative phrases, may be repeated or not, according to taste.

## ITALIAN.

} Same of *e* (and), *o* (or). (Note *a.*)

*Examples.*

L'una piange, l'altra sospira, l'altra si dispera.

The one weeps, the other sighs, the other despairs.

*Note.*—In Italian, the conjunctions *e* and *o* may add a *d* when coming immediately before a vowel, but this is optional; as,

Il più *od* il meno dipende da voi.

The more or the less depends upon you.

*Note a.*—*Non che* is sometimes used in the sense of *and* or *also*.

*Note b.*—We say that *nè* (nor) is *usually* repeated. This is the general rule, and can always be correctly followed; but the best writers sometimes dispense with the repetition: for example, Manzoni writes: “ Il nome di questa, *nè* il casato del personaggio non si trovano nel manoscritto”—Neither the name of this person, nor the house (or family name) of the personage, is found in the manuscript.

columns, sufficient in themselves to discourage the most patient student. We will limit ourselves to the following necessary observations, fully persuaded that the learner who has the diligence to read much, (the only *true* method of acquirement,) will, by degrees, obtain that real information which no grammar can supply.

## SPANISH.

} Same of *y* (and), *o* (or).

*Examples.*

Segun sus propias ideas, sus preocupaciones *y* su conocimiento *o* ignorancia del mundo.

According to his own ideas, his prejudice, and his knowledge or ignorance of the world.

*Note.*—*Y* changes into *é* before a word beginning with *i* or *hi*, and *o* into *ú* before *o* or *ho*; as—

Feo *é* inutil              ugly and useless.

Pobreza *ú* honor            poverty or honour.

} *Ni* may be repeated or not, as in French.

## PORTUGUESE.

} Same of *e* (and), *ou* (or).

*Example.*

São mercadores de ouro, prata, sedas *e* outras fazendas de preço.

They are merchants of gold, silver, silk, and other valuable commodities.

*Note.*—The conjunction *e* is distinguished from the third person singular, present tense of the verb *ser* (*é*) by its having no accent.

} Same of *nem*, nor.

## CONJUNCTIONS.

FRENCH.

*Example.*

L'or *ni* l'ambition, or *ni* l'or *ni* l'ambition ne nous  
rendent heureux.

Neither gold nor ambition renders us happy.

193. *Ni* is frequently used to prevent the repetition }  
of the preposition *sans*.

*Example.*

*Sans* parents *ni* fortune, or *sans* parents et *sans* fortune.  
Without relations or fortune.

ITALIAN.

*Example.*

Questo non s'ha da fare *nè* domani, *nè* mai.  
This must not be done, either to-morrow or ever.

*Nè* may be used, as in English, to commence a phrase.

*Example.*

*Nè* questo fu l'ultimo.  
Nor was this the last.

*Note.*—An accent (') distinguishes the conjunction  
from the pronoun *ne*.

## CONJUNCTIONS.

319

### SPANISH.

*Example.*

No dar à alguno paz *ni* tregua.

To give some one neither peace nor truce.

} Same of *Ni*.

*Example.*

*Ni* le amo, *ni* le temo.

Neither do I love him, nor do I fear him.

### PORTUGUESE.

*Example.*

*Nem* pelas ruas lhes podem passar com suas procissões,  
*nem* casamentos.

Nor can they pass them in the streets with their  
processions or weddings.

} Same ; as in last example.



## VOCABULARY.

---

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Abandonment	Abandonnement	Abbandono	Abandono	Abandono
Abasement	Abaissement	Abassamento	Abatimiento	Humilhação
Abatement	Diminution	Abassamento	Rebaja	Abatimento
Abbey	Abbaye	Abbadia	Abadia	Abbadia
Abbreviation	Abréviaction	Abbreviazione	Abreviacion	Abreviação
Abhorrence	Horreur de	Abborrimento	Aborrecimiento	Aversão
Ability	Capacité	Capacità	Capacidad	Capacidade
Abode	Demeure	Abitazione	Habitacion	Morada
Abolishment	Abolissement	Abolizione	Abolicion	Annullação
Abortion	Avortement	Aborto	Aborto	Aborto
Abridgment	Abrégé	Ristretto	Contraccion	Compendio
Abruptness	Brusquerie	Dirupo	Precipitacion	Precipitação
Abscess	Abcès	Postema	Apostema	Abscesso
Absence	Absence	Assenza	Ausencia	Ausencia
Abstinence	Abstinence	Astinenza	Abstinencia	Abstinencia
Abstract	Résumé	Astratto	Extracto	Abstracto
Absurdity	Absurdité	Assurdo	Absurdo	Absurdo
Abundance	Abondance	Abbondanza	Abundancia	Abundancia
Abuse	Abus	Abuso	Abuso	Abuso

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Abyss	Abîme	Abisso	Abismo	Abysmo
Academy	Académie	Accademia	Academia	Academia
Accent	Accent	Accento	Acento	Accento
Acceptance	Acceptation	Accettazione	Aceptacion	Aceitação
Access	Accès	Accesso	Acceso	Accesso
Accident	Hasard	Accidente	Accidente	Accidente
Acclivity	Pente	Acclività	Rampa	Costa arriba
Accommodation	Accommodement	Accomodamento	Comodidad	Accommodação
Accompaniment	Accompagnement	Accompagnamento	Acompañamiento	Accompanhamento
Accomplice	Complice	Complice	Cómplice	Complice
Accomplishment	Accomplissement	Compimento	Cumplimiento	Cumprimento
Accord	Accord	Accordo	Acuerdo	Concordia
Account	Compte	Conto	Cuenta	Conta
Accountant	Comptable	Computista	Contador	Contador
Accumulation	Entassement	Accumulazione	Acumulacion	Accumulação
Accuracy	Exactitude	Esatezza	Exactitud	Exacção
Accuser	Accusateur	Accusatore	Acusador	Accusador
Ace	As	Asso	As	As
Ache	Mal ; douleur	Dolore	Dolor	Dôr
Achievement	Exploit	Fatto	Hazaña	Façanha
Acid	Acide	Acido	Acido	Acido
Acidity	Acidité	Acidezza	Acidez	Acidez
Acknowledgment	Reconnaissance	Riconoscimento	Reconocimiento	Reconhecimento
Acorn	Gland	Ghianda	Bellota	Bolota ; lande
Acquaintance	Connaissance	Conoscenza	Conocimiento	Conhecimento
Acquirement	Acquisition	Acquisto	Adquisicion	Adquisição
Acquittance	Libération	Quitanza	Descargo	Quitação
Acrostic	Acrostiche	Acrostico	Acrostico	Acrostico
Action	Action ; fait	Azione	Accion	Acção
Activity	Activité	Attivatà	Actividad	Actividade
Actor	Acteur	Attore	Actor	Actor
Actress	Actrice	Attrice	Actriz	Actriz

# VOCABULARY.

323

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Acuteness	Finesse	Acutezza	Aguudeza	Agudeza
Adamant	Aimant	Adamante	Iman	Diamante
Adaptation	Adaptation	Adattazione	Adaptacion	Adaptação
Addition	Addition	Addizione	Adicion	Addição
Address	Adresse	Indirizzo	Sobrescrito	Endereço
Adherence ; adhesion	Adhérence	Aderenza	Adhesión	Adhesão
Adjournment	Ajournement	Il differire	Suspension	Prorrogação
Adjunct	Accessoire	Accessorio	Adjunto	Adjuncto
Adjustment	Ajustement	Aggiustamento	Ajustamiento	Ordem
Administration	Administration	Amministrazione	Administracion	Administração
Admiral	Amiral	Ammiraglio	Almirante	Almirante
Admission	Admission ; aveu	Entrata	Admision	Admissão
Admittance	Admission	Entrata	Entrada	Admissão
Admonishment	Admonition	Ammonizione	Amonestacion	Admoestaçao
Adoption	Adoption	Adottamento	Adopcion	Adopção
Adorer	Adorateur	Adoratore	Adorador	Adorador
Adornment	Ornement	Adornamento	Adorno	Adorno
Adroitness	Adresse	Destreza	Destreza	Destreza
Adult	Adulte	Adulto	Adulto	Adulto
Adulterer	Adultère	Adultero	Adultero	Adultero
Advance	Avance ; progrès	Avanzo	Adelanto	Avanço
Advantage	avantage	Vantaggio	Ventaja	Vantagem
Advent	Avent	Avvento	Advento	Advento
Adventure	Aventure	Avventura	Aventura	Aventura
Adventurer	Aventurier	Avventuriere	Aventurero	Aventureiro
Adverb	Adverbe	Avverbio	Adverbio	Adverbio
Adversary	Adversaire	Avversario	Adversario	Adversario
Adversity	Adversité	Avversità	Adversidad	Adversidade
Advertisement	Avertissement ; avis	Avviso	Aviso	Aviso
Advice	Avis ; conseil	Consiglio	Consejo	Conselho
Adviser	Conseiller	Consigliatore	Consejero	Aconselhador
Affability	Affabilité	Affabilità	Afabilidad	Affabilidade

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Affectionation	Affectation	Affettazione	Afectacion	Afectação
Affection	Affection	Affetto	Afecto	Afecto
Affliction	Affliction	Afflizione	Afliccion	Afligção
Affluence	Opulence	Affluenza	Abundancia	Afluencia
Affront	Insulte	Affronto	Afrenta	Affronta
Age	Âge ; siècle	Età	Edad	Idade
Agency	Agence	Agenzia	Agencia	Agencia
Agent	Agent	Agente	Agente	Agente
Aggressor	Agresseur	Agressore	Agresor	Aggressor
Agility	Agilité	Agilità	Agilidad	Agilidade
Agitation	Agitation	Agitazione	Agitacion	Agitacão
Agony	Agonie	Angoscia	Agonia	Agonia
Agreement	Accord	Accordo	Concordia	Concordia
Agriculturist	Agriculteur	Agricoltore	Agricultor	Agricultor
Ague	Fièvre intermittante	Febbre intermittente	Calentura intermitente	Sezão
Aid	Aide ; assistance	Ajuto	Ayuda	Ajuda
Aim	But ; vue	Fine ; mira	Mira	Fim ; pontaria
Air	Air	Aria	Aire	Aria
Alabaster	Abbâtre	Alabastro	Alabastro	Alabastro
Alacrity	Vivacité	Alacrità	Alegria	Viveza
Alarm	Alarme	Allarme	Alarma	Rebate
Alcohol	Alcool	Alcool	Alcohol	Alcohol
Alembic	Alambic	Lambicco	Alambique	Alambique
Alertness	Promptitude	Vigilanza	Vigilancia	Vigilancia
Algebra	Algèbre	Algebra	Algebra	Algebra
Allegiance	Allégeance	Fedeltà	Lealtad	Fidelidade
Allegory	Allégorie	Allegoria	Alegoria	Allegoria
Alleviation	Adoucissement	Alleviamento	Alivio	Allivio
Alley	Allée	Viottolo	Callejuela	Beco
Allotment	Partage	Divisione	Repartimiento	Parte
Allowance	Permission ; pension	Licenza ; paga	Permito ; pension	Permissão ; paga
Allurement	Attrait	Lusinga	Lisonja	Agradô

# VOCABULARY.

325

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Almanack	Almanach	Almanacco	Almanaque	Almanac
Almighty	Tout-puissant	Onnipotente	Omnipotente	Omnipotente
Almond	Amande	Mándorla	Almendra	Amendoa
Almoner	Aumônier	Elemosiniere	Limosnero	Esmoler
Alms	Aumône	Limósina	Limosna	Esmolas
Alphabet	Alphabet	Alfábeto	Alfabeto	Alphabeto
Altar	Autel	Altare	Altar	Altar
Alteration	Changement	Alterazione	Alteracion	Alteração
Altitude	Hauteur	Altezza	Altura	Altura
Alum	Alun	Allume	Alumbre	Pedra hume
Amazement	Étonnement	Maraviglia	Espanto	Admiraçao
Amazon	Amazone	Amázzone	Amazona	Amazona
Ambassador	Ambassadeur	Ambasciadore	Embajador	Embaixador
Amber	Ambre	Ambra	Ambar	Ambar
Ambiguity	Ambiguité	Ambiguità	Ambigüedad	Ambiguidade
Ambush	Ambuscade	Imboscata	Emboscada	Emboscada
Amendment	Rectification	Emendazione	Enmienda	Emenda
American	Americain	Americano	Americano	Americano
Amethyst	Améthyste	Amatista	Amatista	Ametista
Amiability	Amabilité	Cortesia	Amabilidad	Amabilidade
Ammunition	Munition de guerre	Munizione	Municion	Munição
Amount	Montant	Montante	Importe	Somma
Amusement	Divertissement	Divertimento	Diversión	Divertimento
Analogy	Analogie	Analogia	Analogia	Analogia
Analysis	Analyse	Analisi	Análisis	Analyse
Anarchy	Anarchie	Anarchia	Auarquia	Anarchia
Anatomy	Anatomie	Anatomia	Anatomia	Anatomia
Ancestry	Aïeux	Razza	Linaje	Linhagem
Anchor	Ancre	Áncora	Ancla	Ancora
Anchorite	Anachorète	Anacoreta	Anacoreta	Anachoreta
Anchovy	Anchois	Acciuga	Anchoa	Anchova
Angel	Ange	Ángelo	Ángel	Anjo

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Anger	Colère	Cóllerla	Ira	Ira
Angle	Angle	Ángolo	Ángulo	Angulo
Angler	Pêcheur	Pescatore	Pescador	Pescador
Anguish	Douleur	Angoscia	Angustia	Angustia
Animal	Animal	Animale	Animal	Animal
Animation	Animation	Animazione	Animacion	Animacão
Animosity	Animosité	Animosità	Animosidad	Odio
Ankle	Cheville	Collo del piede	Tobillo	Artelho
Annals	Annales	Annali	Anales	Annaes
Annihilation	Anéantissement	Annichilazione	Aniquilacion	Anniquilação
Anniversary	Anniversaire	Anniversario	Aniversario	Anniversario
Announcement	Annonce ; avis	Annunzio	Aviso	Aviso
Annoyance	Ennui	Moléstia	Molestia	Discommodo
Annuity	Annuité	Rendita	Renta	Renda annual
Annulment	Annulation	Nullamento	Anulacion	Annullação
Anointment	Onction	Unzione	Uncion	Uncião
Answer	Réponse	Risposta	Respuesta	Resposta
Ant	Fourmi	Fornica	Hormiga	Formiga
Antagonist	Antagoniste	Antagonista	Antagonista	Antagonista
Antechamber	Antichambre	Anticámera	Antecamara	Antecamara
Antelope	Antilope	Gazella	Antélope	Antilope
Anthem	Chant ; antienne	Antifona	Antifona	Antiphona
Anticipation	Anticipation	Anticipazione	Anticipacion	Anticipação
Antidote	Antidote	Antidoto	Antídoto	Antidoto
Antipathy	Antipathie	Antipatia	Antipatia	Antipathia
Antiquary	Antiquaire	Antiquario	Anticuario	Antiquario
Antiquity	Antiquité	Antichità	Antigüedad	Antiguidade
Anvil	Enclume	Incede	Yunque	Bigorna
Anxiety	Anxiété	Ansietà	Ansia	Anxiedade ; ancia
Apartment	Appartement	Appartamento	Cuarto	Andar
Apathy	Apathie	Apatia	Apatia	Apathia
Ape	Singe	Scimia	Mono	Macaco

# VOCABULARY.

327

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Aperient	Apéritif	Aperiente	Aperitivo	Aperiente
Aperture	Ouverture; orifice	Apertura	Abertura	Abertura
Apology	Apologie	Apologia	Apología	Apologia
Apoplexy	Apoplexie	Apoplessia	Apoplejia	Apoplexia
Apostle	Apôtre	Apóstolo	Apostol	Apostolo
Apothecary	Apothicaire	Speziale	Boticario	Boticario
Appeal	Appel	Appello	Apelacion	Appellação
Appearance	Apparition	Apparenza	Apariencia	Apparecia
Appendage	Appanage	Accessorio	Pertenencia	Appenso
Appetite	Appétit	Appetito	Apetito	Appetite
Applause	Applaudissement	Applúuso	Aplauso	Applauso
Apple	Pomme	Mela ; pomo	Manzana	Maçã
Applicant	Demandeur	Applicatore	Suplicante	Suplicante
Application	Application ; demande	Applicazione	Aplicacion	Aplicação
Appointment	Nomination	Assegnamento	Nombramiento ; mandato	Mandado
Approach	Approche	Avvicinamento	Acceso	Accesso
Appropriation	Appropriation	Appropriaione	Apropiacion	Appropriação
Approval	Approbation	Approbazione	Aprobacion	Approvação
Approximation	Approximation	Approssimazione	Aproximacion	Approximação
Apricot (and tree)	Abicot ; abricotier	Albicocca ; albicocco	Albaroque	Damasco
April	Avril	Aprile	Abril	Abril
Apron	Tablier	Grembiale	Delantal	Avantal
Aptness	Aptitude	Facilità	Aptitud	Aptidão
Aqueduct	Aqueduc	Aquidotto	Acueducto	Aqueducto
Arab	Arabe	Arabo	Árabe	Árabe
Arbitration	Arbitrage	Arbitrato	Arbitrio	Arbitragem
Arbitrator	Arbitre	Árbitro	Arbitrador	Arbitro
Arbour	Berceau	Pérgola	Enramada	Parreiral
Arch	Arche ; arc ; voûte	Arco	Arco	Arco
Archangel	Archange	Arcángelo	Arcángel	Archanjo
Archbishop	Archevêque	Arcivescovo	Arzobispo	Arcebispo
Archer	Archer	Arciere	Arquero	Besteiro

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Architect	Architecte	Architetto	Arquitecto	Architecto
Ardency ; ardour	Ardeur	Ardore	Ardor	Ardor
Argument	Argument	Argomento	Argumento	Argumento
Aridity	Aridité	Aridità	Sequedad	Aridez
Arm	Bras ; arme	Braccio	Brazo	Braço
Armour	Armure	Armadura	Armadura	Armas
Armourer	Armurier	Armajuolo	Armador	Armeiro
Arrangement	Arrangement	Ordine	Arreglo	Arranjo
Arrest	Arrêt ; arrestation	Arresto	Arresto	Detença
Arrival	Arrivée	Arrivo	Llegada	Chegada
Arrogance	Arrogance	Arroganza	Arrogancia	Arrogancia
Arrow	Flèche	Saetta	Saeta	Setta
Arsenic	Arsénique	Arsénico	Arsénico	Arsenico
Art	Art ; artifice	Arte	Arte	Arte
Artery	Artère	Artéria	Arteria	Arteria
Artichoke	Artichaut	Carciofo	Alcachofa	Alcachofra
Article	Article ; objet	Articolo	Artículo	Articulo
Artist	Artiste	Artista	Artista	Artista
Ascent	Ascension ; élévation	Ascendimento	Subida	Eminencia
Ash (tree)	Frêne	Frássino ; orno	Fresno	Freixo
Ashes	Cendres	Cenere	Ceniza	Cinzas
Asparagus	Asperge	Aspárago	Espárrago	Espargo
Aspect	Aspect ; regard	Aspetto	Aspecto	Aspecto
Aspen	Tremble	Trémula	Alamo temblon	Alemo
Ass	Âne	Ásino	Borrico	Asno ; burro
Assailant	Assaillant	Assalitore	Asaltador	Assaltador
Assassin	Assassin	Assassino	Asesino	Assassino
Assassination	Assassinat	Assassinio	Asesinato	Assassinio
Assault	Assaut	Assalto	Asalto	Assalto
Assemblage	Assemblée	Unione	Asamblea	Ajuntamento
Assent	Sanction	Assenso	Asenso	Consentimento
Assertion	Assertion	Asserzione	Asercion	Asserção

# VOCABULARY.

329

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Assignment	Cession	Cessione	Cesion	Assignação
Assistance	Aide	Soccorso	Socorro	Ajuda
Assortment	Assortiment	Assortimento	Sortido	Sortimento
Assurance	Assurance	Sicurtà	Seguridad	Segurança
Asthma	Asthme	Asma	Asma	Asma
Astonishment	Étonnement	Maraviglia	Espanto ; sorpresa	Admiraçao
Astrologer	Astrologue	Astrólogo	Astrólogo	Astrologo
Astronomy	Astronomie	Astronomia	Astronomia	Astronomia
Asylum	Asile	Asilo	Asilo	Asilo
Atmosphere	Atmosphère	Atmosfera	Atmosfera	Atmosphera
Atonement	Expiation	Espiazione	Expiacion	Expiação
Attachment	Attachement	Affetto ; sequestro	Aficion ; embargo	Amizade; confiscação
Attack	Attaque	Attacco	Ataque	Ataque
Attainment	Acquisition	Acquisto	Logro	Acquisição
Attempt	Essai ; attentat	Attentato	Atentado	Tentativa
Attendant	Dépendant	Servo	Servidor	Criado
Attention	Attention	Attenzione	Atencion	Attenção
Attire	Vêtement	Abbigliamento	Atavio	Atavio
Attitude	Attitude ; pose	Attitudine	Actitud	Attitude
Attorney	Procureur ; avoué	Procuratore	Procurador	Procurador
Attraction	Attraction	Attrazione	Atraccion	Attracção
Auction	Enchère	Incanto	Almoneda	Almoeda; leilão
Auditor	Auditeur	Auditore	Auditor	Auditor
August	Auguste	Agosto	Agusto	Agosto
Aunt	Tante	Zia	Tia	Tia
Aurora	Aurore	Aurora	Aurora	Aurora
Authentication	Authenticité	Autenticazione	Autenticidad	Authenticidade
Author	Auteur ; cause	Autore	Autor	Autor
Authority	Autorité	Autoritá	Autoridad	Autoridade
Autumn	Automne	Autunno	Otoño	Outono
Avarice	Avarice	Avarizia	Avaricia	Avareza
Average	Moyenne ; avarie	Avaria ; quantità media	Averia ; parte igual	Avaria; termo medio

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Aviary	Volière	Uccelliera	Pajarera	Viveiro de passaros
Avowal	Aveu	Confessione	Confesion	Confissäo
Award	Décret	Arbitrato	Decision	Arbitrio
Awe	Terreur	Paura	Miedo	Medo
Awl	Alène	Lésina	Lesna	Sovela
Awning	Tente	Tenda	Toldo	Toldo
Axe	Hache	Scure	Hacha	Machado
Axis	Axe	Asse	Eje	Eixo
Baby	Enfant	Bambino	Criatura	Criança
Bachelor	Garçon	Baccelliere	Soltero	Bacharel
Back	Dos	Dosso	Espalda	Costado
Backbiter	Calomniateur	Maldiciente	Detractor	Detractor
Backgammon	Trictrac	Tric-trac	Chaqueite	Jogo do gamão
Backwardness	Lenteur	Lentezza	Tardanza	Descuido
Bacon	Lard	Lardo	Tocino	Toucinho
Badge	Signe; marque	Segno	Señal	Insignia
Badger	Blaireau	Tasso	Tejon	Texugo
Badness	Méchanceté	Cattiveria	Maldad	Ruindade
Baggage	Bagage	Bagaglio	Bagaje	Bagagem
Bagpipe	Cornemuse	Cornamusica	Gaita	Gaita
Bail	Caution	Sicurtà	Caucion	Fiança
Bailif	Huissier	Bali ; fattore	Alguacil	Alcaide
Baize	Drap de billard	Bajetta	Bayeta	Baeta
Baker	Boulanger	Fornajo	Panadero	Forneiro
Ball	Bal	Ballo ; palla	Baile ; bola	Dansa ; bola
Balloon	Ballon	Pallone	Globo	Balão
Ballot	Boule ; scrutin	Ballotta	Balota	Bala
Balm	Baume	Balsamo	Balsamo	Balsamo
Bamboo	Bambou	Bambù	Bamboa	Bambu
Band	Bandé	Banda	Venda	Atadura
Bandage	Bandéau	Víncolo	Vendaje	Atadura

# VOCABULARY.

331

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Bandit	Bandit	Bandito	Bandido	Ladrão
Banishment	Bannissement	Esilio	Destierro	Desterro
Bank	Banque ; rive	Banco ; lido	Banco ; orilla	Banco ; margem
Banker	Banquier	Banchiere	Banquero	Banqueiro
Banner	Pavillon	Bandiera	Bandera	Bandeira
Banquet	Banquet	Banchetto	Banquete	Banquete
Baptism	Baptême	Battesimo	Bautismo	Baptismo
Bar	Barrière	Sbarra	Barra	Barra
Barbarity	Barbarie	Barbarie	Barbaridad	Barbaridade
Barber	Barbier	Barbiere	Barbero	Barbeiro
Bargain	Marché	Patto	Pacto	Pacto
Barge	Barque	Barca	Faluca	Barca
Bark	Écorce	Scorza ; barca	Corteza ; barca	Casca ; barca
Barley	Orge	Orzo	Cebada	Cevada
Barometer	Baromètre	Barómetro	Barómetro	Barometro
Baron	Baron	Barone	Baron	Barão
Barrel	Baril	Barile	Barril	Barril
Barrenness	Sterilité	Sterilità	Esterilidad	Esterilidade
Barrister	Avocat	Avvocato	Abogado	Advogado
Barrow	Brouette	Barella	Carreton	Paviola
Base	Base	Base	Base	Base
Bashfulness	Timidité	Timidità	Timidez	Modestia
Basin	Bassin	Bacino	Bacia	Bacia
Basket	Pannier	Paniere	Cesta	Cesto
Bastard	Bâtarde	Bastardo	Bastardo	Bastardo
Bat	Chauve-souris	Pipistrello	Murciélagos	Morcego
Bath	Bain	Bagno	Baño	Banho
Battalion	Bataillon	Battaglione	Batallón	Batalhão
Battery	Batterie	Batteria	Bateria	Bateria
Battle	Bataille	Battaglia	Batalla	Batalha
Bay	Baie	Baja	Bahia	Bahia
Bayonet	Baïonnette	Bajonetta	Bayoneta	Baioneta

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Beach	Rivage	Lido	Ribera	Praia
Bead	Grain ; perle	Pallottolina ; rosaria	Cuenta	Conta
Beak	Bec	Becco	Pico	Bico
Beam	Poutre	Trave	Viga	Trave
Bean	Fève	Fava	Haba	Fava
Bear	Ours	Orso	Oso	Urso
Beard	Barbe	Barba	Barba	Barba
Bearer	Porteur	Portatore ; latore	Portador	Portador
Beast	Bête	Bestia	Bestia	Besta
Beauty	Beauté	Bellezza	Hermosura	Belleza
Beaver	Castor	Castore	Castor	Castor
Bed	Lit	Lotto	Cama	Cama
Bedstead	Couchette	Lettiera ; letto	Cama ; catre	Leito
Bee	Abeille	Ape	Abeja	Abelha
Beech	Hêtre	Faggio	Haya	Faia
Beef	Bœuf	Manzo	Vaca	Vaca
Beer	Bière	Birra	Cerveza	Cerveja
Beetle	Mail ; escarbot	Scarafaggio	Escarabajo	Escaravelho
Beggar	Mendiant	Mendico	Mendigo	Mendigo
Beginning	Commencement	Principio	Principio	Principio
Behaviour	Conduite	Condotta	Conducta	Comportamento
Beholder	Spectateur	Spettatore	Espectador	Espectador
Belief	Croyance	Credenza	Creencia	Credito
Bell	Cloche	Campana	Campana	Sino
Bellows	Soufflet	Soffetto	Fuelle	Folles
Belly	Ventre	Ventre	Vientre	Ventre
Belt	Ceinture	Cintura	Cinto	Boldrié
Bench	Banc	Banco	Banco	Banco
Bending	Courbure	Curvatura	Encorvadura	Curvadura
Beneficence	Bienfaisance	Beneficenza	Beneficencia	Beneficencia
Benefit	Bienfait	Beneficio	Beneficio	Beneficio
Benevolence	Bienveillance	Benevolenza	Beneyolencia	Benevolencia

# VOCABULARY.

333

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Bergamot	Bergamote	Bergamotto	Bergamota	Bergamota
Berry	Baie ; graine	Bacca	Bayá	Baga
Bet	Pari	Scommessa	Apuesta	Aposta
Betrayer	Traître ; trompeur	Traditore	Traidor	Traidor
Beverage	Boisson	Bevanda	Bebida	Bebida
Bewailing	Lamentation	Lamento	Lamentacion	Lamentação
Bias	Penchant ; prévention	Inclinazione	Inclinacion	Propensão.
Bigamy	Bigamie	Bigamia	Bigamia	Bigamia
Bigot	Bigot ; dévot	Bigotto	Fanatico	Fanatico
Bile	Bile	Bile	Bilis	Bilis
Bill	Note ; bec	Conto ; becco	Cuenta ; pico	Conta ; bico
Billiard	Billard	Bigliardo	Villar	Bilhar
Billiard ball	Bille	Palla da bigliardo	Bola de villar	Pella de bilhar
Billiard cue	Queue de billard	Stecca	Taco	Bilharda
Binder	Relieur	Legatore	Encuadernador	Encadernador
Binding	Bandea ; reliure	Legamento	Encuadernacion	Encadernação
Biography	Biographie	Biografia	Biografia	Biographia
Birch	Bouleau	Scopa	Abedul	Vidoeiro
Bird	Oiseau	Uccello	Pájaro	Passaro
Birth	Naissance	Nascita	Nacimiento	Nascimento
Bishop	Évêque	Véscovo	Obispo	Bispo
Bit	Morceau ; frein	Pezzo ; freno	Pedazo ; freno	Freio
Bitch	Chienne	Cagna	Perra	Cadella
Bite	Morsure	Morsura	Mordedura	Mordedura
Bitterness	Amertume	Amarezza	Amargura	Amargor
Blackberry	Mûre	Mora	Zarzamora	Amoras
Blackbird	Merle	Merlo	Merla	Merlo
Blacking	Cirage	Lucido	Lustre	Graxa
Blacksmith	Forgeron	Fabbro	Herrero	Ferreiro
Blade	Brin ; lame	Lama	Pala	Pá
Blame	Blâme	Colpa	Culpa	Culpa
Blanket	Couverture	Coltre ; coperta	Manta	Cobertor de lã

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Blast	Souffle	Soffio	Soplo	Assopro
Blaze	Flamme	Fiamma	Llama	Chamma
Blessing	Bénédiction	Benedizione	Bendicion	Benção
Blindness	Aveuglement	Cecità	Ceguedad	Cegueira
Blister	Vessie	Vescica	Vejiga	Bexiga
Blood	Sang	Sangue	Sangre	Sangue
Blossom	Fleur	Fiore	Flor	Flor
Blot	Tache	Macchia	Mancha	Borrão
Blow	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Golpe
Boar	Sanglier	Cignale ; porco	Jabali	Javalí
Board	Planche	Távola	Tabla	Taboa
Boat	Bateau	Barca	Barca	Barco
Body	Corps	Corpo	Cuerpo	Corpo
Boiler	Chaudière	Caldaja	Caldero	Caldeira
Bolt	Verrou	Chiavistello	Cerrojo	Ferrolho
Bond	Lien ; bon	Óbbligo	Obligacion	Obrigação
Bone	Os	Osso	Hueso	Osso
Bonnet	Bonnet	Bonetto	Bonete	Barrete
Book	Livre	Libro	Libro	Livro
Boot	Botte	Stivale	Bota	Bota
Border	Bord ; frontière	Márgine	Márgen	Borda
Bottle	Bouteille	Bottiglia	Botella	Garrafa
Bottom	Fond	Fondo	Fondo	Fundo
Bow	Arc ; salut	Arco ; inchino	Arco ; reverencia	Arco ; reverencia
Box	Casse ; loge	Scátola ; palchetto	Caja ; palco	Caixa ; camarote
Boy	Garçon	Ragazzo	Muchacho	Rapaz
Braces	Bretelles	Bretelle	Tirantes	Suspensiones
Brain	Cervelle	Cervello	Cerebro	Cerebro
Branch	Branche	Ramo	Ramo	Ramo
Brandy	Eau-de-vie	Acquavite	Aguardiente	Agoa ardente
Brass	Cuivre ; airain	Rame	Bronce	Latão
Breach	Brèche	Breccia	Brecha	Brecha

# VOCABULARY.

335

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Bread	Pain	Pane	Pan	Pão
Breadth	Largeur	Larghezza	Anchura	Largura
Breakage	Casse	Rottura	Rotura	Quebradura
Breakfast	Déjeuner	Colazione	Almuerzo	Almoço
Breast	Sein	Seno	Seno	Peito
Breath	Haleine ; souffle	Fiato	Aliento	Respiração
Breathing	Respiration	Respiro	Aspiracion	Respiração
Breeding	Génération ; éducation	Il generare ; educazione	Crianza	Criação
Breeze	Brise	Venticello	Brisa	Viração
Brewer	Brasseur	Birrajo	Cervecero	Cervejeiro
Bribe	Appât	Imbeccata	Soborno	Soborno
Bribery	Corruption	Corrompimento	Soborno	Sobornaçao
Brick	Brique	Mattone	Ladrillo	Tijolo
Bride	Nouvelle mariée	Sposa	Novia	Noiva
Bridegroom	Nouveau marié	Sposo	Novio	Noivo
Bridge	Pont	Ponte	Puente	Ponte
Bridle	Bride	Briglia	Brida	Freio
Brief	Bref; dossier	Breve	Breve	Breve
Brightness	Éclat	Chiarezza	Brillo	Resplendor
Brim	Bord	Lembo	Borde	Borda
Briton	Breton	Inglese	Breton	Britannico
Broker	Courtier	Sensale	Corredor	Corretor
Bronze	Bronze	Bronzo	Bronce	Bronze
Brooch	Broche	Spillo da petto	Broche	Gargantilha
Brook	Ruisseau	Ruscello	Arroyo	Ribeiro
Broom	Balai	Scopa	Escoba	Vassoura
Broth	Bouillon ; potage	Brodo	Caldo	Caldo
Brother	Frère	Fratello	Hermano	Irmão
Brow	Sourcil	Ciglio ; fronte	Ceja	Testa
Brush	Brosse	Scopetta	Cepillo	Escova
Brute	Brute	Bruto	Bruto	Bruto
Bucket	Seau	Secchia	Cubo	Balde

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Buckle	Boucle	Fibbia	Hebillá	Fivelá
Bud	Bouton	Boccia ; bottone	Boton	Botão
Bug	Punaise	Cimice	Chinche	Persovejo
Bugle	Bugle	Cornetta	Corneta	Corneta
Building	Édifice	Fabbrica	Fábrica	Edificio
Bulk	Masse	Massa	Masa	Grossura
Bull	Taureau	Toro	Toro	Touro
Bullet	Boulet ; balle	Palla	Bala	Bala
Bump	Bosse	Bozza	Bulto	Gallo
Bunch	Grappe	Fascio	Nudo	Mólho
Bundle	Paquet	Fardello	Envoltorio	Feixe
Burden	Fardéau	Cárico	Carga	Carga
Burial	Enterrement	Sepoltura	Entierro	Enterro
Burn	Brûlure	Scottatura	Quemadura	Queimadura
Bush	Buisson	Boschetto	Arbusto	Arbusto
Business	Affaire ; occupation	Affare ; negozio	Negocio	Negocio
Butcher	Boucher	Beccajo	Carnicero	Carniceiro
Butter	Beurre	Butirro ; burro	Manteca	Manteiga
Butterfly	Papillon	Parpaglione	Mariposa	Borboleta
Button	Bouton	Bottone	Boton	Botão
Buyer	Acheteur	Compratore	Comprador	Comprador
Buzzing	Bourdonnement	Susurro	Susurro	Zunido
Cab	Cabriolet	Calesse	Cab	Cab
Cabbage	Chou	Câvolo	Col	Couve
Cabin	Cabine	Camerino	Cabaña ; camarote	Camarote
Cabinet	Cabinet	Gabinetto	Gabinete	Gabinete
Cable	Câble	Gómena	Cable	Cabo
Cage	Cage	Gabbia	Jaula	Gaiola
Cake	Gâteau	Mozzo ; pane	Bollo	Bolo
Calculation	Calcul	Calcolo	Calculo	Culculo
Calf	Veau ; mollet	Vitello	Ternero	Vitela

# VOCABULARY.

337

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Calico	Calico ; indienne	Tela di cotone	Calicó	Panninho ; chita
Call	Appel ; visite	Appello ; visita	Llamada ; visita	Chamada ; visita
Calmness	Calme	Calma	Calma	Tranquillidade
Camel	Chameau	Cammello	Camello	Camelo
Candidate	Aspirant	Concorrente	Aspirante	Candidato
Candle	Chandelle	Candela	Candela	Vela
Cane	Canne	Canna	Caña	Canna
Cannon	Canon	Cannone	Cañon	Canhão
Cap	Bonnet ; barrette	Berretta	Gorro	Barrete
Cape	Cap	Capo	Cabo	Cabo
Captain	Capitaine	Capitano	Capitan	Capitão
Card	Carte	Carta ; biglietto	Naipé ; carta	Carta ; bilhete
Care	Souci ; soin	Cura	Cuidado	Cuidado
Carelessness	Insouciance	Trascuranza	Descuido	Negligencia
Carpenter	Charpentier	Falegname	Carpintero	Carpinteiro
Carpet	Tapis	Tappeto	Tapete	Tapete
Carriage	Voiture	Carrozza	Carroza	Carruagem
Carrier	Porteur	Portatore	Portador	Portador
Carrot	Carotte	Carota	Zanahoria	Cenoura
Cart	Charrette	Carro	Carro	Carro
Case	Cas ; boite	Cassa ; scatola	Caja	Caixa
Cash	Caisse	Cassa ; denaro contante	Dinero contante ; caja	Dinheiro ; caixa
Castle	Château	Castello	Castillo	Castello
Cat	Chat	Gatto	Gato	Gato
Cattle	Bétail (pl. bestiaux)	Bestiame	Ganado	Gado
Cause	Cause	Causa	Causa	Causa
Caution	Précaution ; avis	Precauzione	Precaucion	Cautela
Cave	Caverne	Grotta ; cava	Cueva	Caverna
Cedar	Cèdre	Cedro	Cedro	Cedro
Cellar	Cave	Cantina	Sótano ; cueva	Adega
Cement	Ciment	Cemento	Cimento	Cemento
Centre	Centre	Centro	Centro	Centro

## VOCABULARY.

## ENGLISH.

	FRENCH.
Ceremony	Cérémonie
Certainty	Certitude
Certificate	Certificat
Chain	Chaîne
Chair	Chaise
Chalk	Craie
Challenge	Défi
Chamber	Chambre
Chance	Hasard ; chance
Chancellor	Chancelier
Change	Changement
Chapel	Chapelle
Chapter	Chapitre
Character	Caractère ; rôle
Charcoal	Charbon
Charge	Charge ; frais
Charity	Charité
Charm	Charme
Charter	Contrat
Chase	Chasse
Chasm	Abîme
Cheapness	Bon marché
Cheat	Trompeur
Check	Échec ; mandat
Cheek	Joue
Cheerfulness	Gaîté
Cheese	Fromage
Chemist	Pharmacien
Cherry	Cerise
Chess	Échecs
Chest	Coffre ; caisse
Chestnut	Châtaigne ; marron

## ITALIAN.

Ceremonia
Certezza
Certificato
Catena
Sedia
Gesso
Sfida
Camera; stanza
Accidente
Cancelliere
Cambiamento
Capella
Capitolo
Carattere
Carbone di legna
Carico
Carità
Incanto
Contratto
Caccia
Aabisso
Buon mercato
Ingannatore
Ritegno ; contrassegno
Guancia
Allegrezza
Formaggio
Chimico
Ciliegia
Scacchi
Cassa
Castagno

## SPANISH.

Ceremonia
Certeza
Certificación
Cadena
Silla
Greda
Desafío
Camara ; cuarto
Accidente
Cancelario
Cambio
Capilla
Capítulo
Carácter
Carbon de leña
Cargo
Caridad
Encanto
Contrata
Caza
Grieta
Baratura
Trampista
Freno ; orden
Mejilla
Alegria
Queso
Químico
Cereza
Ajedrez
Caja
Castaña

## PORTUGUESE.

Ceremonia
Certeza
Certidão
Cadêa
Cadeira
Cré
Desafio
Camera
Acaso
Chanceler
Cambio
Capella
Capitulo
Caracter
Carvão de lenha
Cargo
Caridade
Encanto
Contrato
Caça
Abertura
Barateza
Enganador
Reprehensão ; ordem
Face
Alegria
Queijo
Chimico
Cereja
Xadrez
Caixa
Castanha

# VOCABULARY.

339.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Chicken	Poulet	Pollastro	Polluelo	Pinto
Chief	Chef	Capo	Jefe	Chefe
Child	Eufant	Bambino	Hijo	Menino
Chimney	Cheminée	Cammino	Chimenea	Cheminé
Chin	Menton	Mento	Barba	Barba
Chisel	Ciseau	Cesello	Escoplo	Escopro
Chocolate	Chocolat	Cioccolato	Chocolate	Chocolate
Choice	Choix	Scelta	Eleccion	Escolha
Chop	Côtelette	Costerella	Costilla	Costilha
Christian	Chrétien	Cristiano	Cristiano	Christão
Christmas	Noël	Natale	Navidad	Natal
Church	Église	Chiesa	Iglesia	Igreja
Cinder	Cendre	Cenere	Ceniza	Borralho
Cinnamon	Cannelle	Cannella	Canela	Canella
Cipher	Chiffre	Cifra	Cifra	Cifra
Circle	Cercle	Circolo	Círculo	Círculo
Circulation	Circulation	Circolazione	Circulacion	Circulação
Circumference	Circonférence	Circonferenza	Circunferencia	Circumferencia
Circumstance	Circonstance	Circostanza	Circunstancia	Circumstancia
Circus	Cirque	Circo	Circo	Circo
Citizen	Citoyen	Cittadino	Ciudadano	Cidadão
Citron	Citron	Cedrato	Cidra	Cidra
City	Cité ; ville	Città	Ciudad	Cidade
Civility	Civilité	Civiltà	Civilidad	Cortezia
Claim	Demande	Pretensione	Pretension	Pretenção
Class	Classe	Classe	Clase	Classe
Claw	Griffe	Unghione	Garra	Garra
Clay	Argile	Argilla	Arcilla	Barro
Cleanness	Propreté	Pulizia	Limpieza	Limpeza
Clearness	Clarté	Chiarezza	Claridad	Claridade
Cleft	Fente	Fessura	Abertura	Fenda
Clergy	Clergé	Clero	Clero	Clero

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Clerk	Commis	Scrivano	Dependiente	Caixeiro
Cloak	Manteau	Mantello	Capa	Capote
Clock	Horloge ; pendule	Pendulo	Reloj	Relogio
Clog	Sabot	Galoscia	Galocha	Tamancos
Closet	Cabinet	Gabinetto	Gabinete	Gabinete
Cloth	Toile	Tela ; panno	Paño	Panno
Clothes	Habits	Ábiti	Vestidos	Vestidos
Cloud	Nuage	Nube	Nube	Nuvem
Clove	Clou	Garofano	Clavo	Cravo
Club	Club ; bâton	Club ; bastone	Club ; basto	Club ; pao
Cluster	Grappe	Grappolo	Grupo	Grupo
Coach	Carrosse	Carrozza	Coche	Coche
Coachman	Cocher	Cochiere	Cochero	Cochero
Coal	Charbon	Carbone	Carbon	Carvão
Coast	Côte	Costa	Costa	Costa
Coat	Habit	Ábito	Casaca	Casaca
Cochineal	Cochenille	Cocciniglia	Cochinilla	Cochonilla
Cock	Coq	Gallo	Gallo	Gallo
Coffee	Café	Caffé	Café	Café
Coffin	Cercueil	Cassa da morto	Ataud	Ataude
Coin	Coin ; monnaie	Moneta	Moneda	Moeda
Cold	Froid ; rhume	Freddo ; raffreddor	Frio	Frio
Collar	Collier	Collaretto	Collar	Collar
Collection	Collection	Raccolta	Colección	Colleccão
Collector	Collecteur ; receveure	Collettore	Colector	Collector
College	Collège	Collegio	Colegio	Collegio
Colonel	Colonel	Colonnello	Coronel	Coronel
Colony	Colonie	Colonia	Colonia	Colonia
Colour	Couleur	Colore	Color	Côr
Column	Colonne	Colonna	Coluna	Columna
Comb	Peigne	Pettine	Peine	Pente
Combination	Combinaison	Combinazione	Combinacion	Combinação

# VOCABULARY.

341

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Comfort	Agrèment ; consolation	Conforto	Confortacion ; consuelo	Conforto
Coming	Approche	Venuta	Venida	Vinda
Commander	Commandant	Comandante	Comandante	Commandante
Commerce	Commerce	Commercio	Comercio	Comercio
Commission	Commission	Commissione	Comision	Comissão
Committee	Comité	Comitato	Comision	Comissão
Companion	Compagnon	Compagno	Compañero	Companheiro
Company	Compagnie	Compagnia	Compañía	Companhia
Comparison	Comparaison	Paragone	Comparacion	Comparação
Competitor	Compétiteur	Competitore	Competidor	Competidor
Complaint	Plainte	Lagno	Queja	Queixo
Completion	Accomplissement	Compimento	Complemento	Cumprimento
Complexion	Teint	Carnagione	Tez	Compleição
Compliment	Compliment	Complimento	Cumplimiento	Cumprimento
Compromise	Compromis	Compromessa	Compromiso	Compromisso
Concealment	En secret	Nascondimento	Escondimiento	Em segredo
Concern	Affaire	Affare	Negocio	Negocio
Concession	Concession	Concessione	Concesion	Concessão
Condition	Condition ; qualité	Condizione	Condicion	Condição
Condolence	Condoléance	Condoglienza	Pésame	Condolencia
Conduct	Conduite	Condotta	Conducta	Conducta
Confession	Confession ; aveu	Confessione	Confesion	Confissão
Confessor	Confesseur	Confessore	Confesor	Confessor
Confidence	Confiance	Confidenza	Confianza	Confiança
Confinement	Détention	Prigionia	Prision	Prisão
Conflict	Conflit ; lutte	Conflitto	Conflict	Conflict
Congratulation	Félicitation	Congratulazione	Congratulacion	Congratulação
Connexion	Connexion ; famille	Unione ; parentela	Conexion	Connexão
Conquest	Conquête	Conquista	Conquista	Conquista
Conscience	Conscience	Coscienza	Conciencia	Consciencia
Conscript	Conscrit	Coscritto	Conscripto	Conscripto
Consecration	Consécration	Consacrazione	Consagracion	Consagração

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Consent	Consentement	Assenso	Asenso	Consenso
Consequence	Conséquence ; suite	Conseguenza	Consecuencia	Consequencia
Conspirator	Conspirateur	Conguirato	Conspirador	Conjurado
Constancy	Constance	Costanza	Constancia	Constancia
Constituent	Constituant	Costituente	Constituyente	Constituinte
Constraint	Contrainte ; gêne	Soggezione	Compulsion	Constrangimento
Contempt	Mépris	Disprezzo	Desprecio	Desprezo
Content	Contentement	Contento	Contento	Contento
Contract	Contrat	Contratto	Contrato	Contracto
Contrast	Contraste	Contrasto	Contraste	Contraste
Contrivance	Invention	Invenzione	Invencion	Invenção
Convenience	Convenance	Comodo	Comodidad	Comodidade
Convent	Convent	Convento	Convento	Convento
Conversation	Conversation ; entretien	Conversazione	Conversacion	Conversação
Conveyance	Transport	Trasporto	Transporte	Transporte
Convict	Forçat	Condannato	Convicto	Convicto
Convulsion	Convulsion	Convulsione	Convulsion	Convulsão
Cook	Cuisinier	Cuoco	Cocinero	Cozinheiro
Cooper	Tonnelier	Bottajo	Tonelero	Tanoeiro
Copper	Cuivre	Rame	Cobre	Cobre
Copy	Copie	Copia	Copia	Copia
Coral	Corail	Corallo	Coral	Coral
Cord	Corde	Corda	Cuerda	Corda
Cork	Bouchon	Turacciolo	Corcho	Rolha
Corkscrew	Tire-bouchon	Cavaturaccioli	Tirabuzon	Sacarolhas
Corn	Grain ; blé	Grano	Grano	Trigo
Corner	Coin	Canto	Rincon	Canto
Coronation	Couronnement	Incoronazione	Coronacion	Coroação
Coronet	Couronne	Coronetta	Corona	Coroa
Corporal	Caporal	Corporale	Caporal	Corporal
Correspondence	Correspondance	Corrispondenza	Correspondencia	Correspondencia
Cosmetic	Cosmétique	Cosmetico	Cosmetico	Cosmetico

# VOCABULARY.

343

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEUGUESE.
Cottage	Caban ; chaumière	Capanna	Cabaña	Cabana
Cotton	Coton	Cotone	Algodon	Algodão
Cough	Toux	Tosse	Tos	Tosse
Council	Conseil	Consiglio	Concilio	Concilio
Counsel	Conseil ; avis	Consiglio	Consejo	Conselho
Count	Compte ; comte	Conto ; conte	Cuenta ; conde	Conta ; conde
Countenance	Figure	Fisonomia	Semblante	Semblante
Counter	Comptoir	Banco	Mostrador	Mostrador
Counting-house	Bureau	Banco	Escriptorio	Escriptorio
Country	Patrie ; pays	Paese ; campagna	Pais ; campo	Patria ; campo
Couple	Couple	Coppia	Par	Par
Course	Cours	Corso	Corrida	Curso
Court	Cour	Corte	Corte	Côrte
Cousin	Cousin	Cugino	Primo	Primo
Cover	Couverture	Coperta	Cubierta	Coberta
Cow	Vache	Vacca	Vaca	Vaca
Coward	Poltron ; lâche	Codardo	Cobarde	Cobarde
Crab	Écrevisse	Granchio	Cangrejo	Caranguejo
Cradle	Berceau	Culla	Cuna	Berço
Crash	Fracas	Fracasso	Fracaso	Estrondo
Cream	Crème	Crema	Crema	Nata
Creator	Créateur	Creatore	Criador	Criador
Credit	Crédit	Credito	Credito	Credito
Creditor	Créancier	Creditore	Acreedor	Crédor
Crescent	Croissant	Crescente	Creciente	Crescente
Cress	Cresson	Crescione	Berro	Agriões (pl.)
Crier	Crieur	Gridatore	Pregonero	Pregoeiro
Crime	Crime	Delitto	Delito	Crime
Cripple	Boiteux	Zoppo	Estropiado	Coxo
Crisis	Crise	Crisi	Crisis	Crisis
Criterion	Règle	Criterio	Criterio	Criterio
Critic	Critique ; censeur	Critico ; censore	Critico	Critico

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Crockery	Poterie ; fayence	Stoviglie	Loza	Louça
Crop	Récolte	Raccolta	Cosecha	Colheita
Cross	Croix	Croce	Cruz	Cruz
Crow	Corbeau	Corvo	Cuervo	Corvo
Crowd	Foule	Folla	Gentio	Tropel
Crown	Couronne	Corona	Corona	Coroa
Cruelty	Cruauté	Crudeltà	Crueldad	Crueldade
Cruet	Huilier	Ampollina	Ampolleto	Galheta
Crum	Mie	Mica	Miga	Miolo
Crupper	Croupe	Groppa	Grupa	Garupa
Crust	Croûte	Crosta	Costra	Codea
Cry	Cri	Grido	Grito	Grito
Crystal	Cristal	Cristallo	Cristal	Cristal
Cucumber	Concombre	Cetriuolo	Cohombro	Pepino
Cup	Coupe ; tasse	Coppa ; tazza	Copa ; taza	Taça ; chicara
Cupboard	Armoire	Armario	Armario	Almario
Curb	Frein	Freno	Freno	Freo
Cure	Guérison	Guarigione	Cura	Cura
Currant	Raisin	Uva passa	Grosella	Uva de Corintho
Curse	Malédiction	Maledizione	Maldicion	Maldição
Curtain	Rideau	Cortina	Cortina	Cortina
Curve	Courbe	Curva	Curva	Curva
Cushion	Coussin	Cuscina	Cojin	Coxim
Custom	Coutume	Costume	Costumbre	Costume
Cutler	Coutelier	Coltellinajo	Cuchillero	Cutileiro
Cutlet	Côtelette	Costerella	Chuleta	Costilha
Cutting	Coupe	Taglio	Cortadura	Cortadura
Dagger	Poignard	Pugnale	Daga ; puñal	Punhal
Dairy	Laiterie	Cascina	Quesera	Queijeira
Damage	Dommage ; avarie	Danno	Daño	Damno
Damask	Damas	Dommasco	Damasco	Damasco

# VOCABULARY.

345

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Damp	Humidité	Umidità	Humedad	Humidade
Damson	Prune de Damas	Amoscina	Damascena	Ameixa
Dance	Danse	Ballo	Baile	Baile
Danger	Danger	Pericolo	Peligro	Perigo
Darkness	Obscurité	Oscurità	Oscuridad	Escuridade
Dart	Dard	Dardo	Dardo	Dardo
Date	Date ; datte (fruit)	Data ; dáttero (fruit)	Data ; dátil (fruit)	Data ; tâmara (fruit)
Daughter	Fille	Figlia	Hija	Filha
Daughter-in-law	Belle-fille	Figliastra	Nuera	Nora
Dawn	Aube	Alba	Alba	Alva
Day	Jour	Giorno	Dia	Dia
Deafness	Surdité	Sordità	Sordera	Surdez
Deal	Quantité; bois blanc (wood)	Quantità ; abete	Cantidad ; madera de pino	Quantidade ; pinho
Dealer	Marchand	Mercante	Mercader	Mercador
Dearness	Cherté	Tenerezza; prezzo caro	Cariño ; precio subido	Amor ; preço alto
Dearth	Disette	Scarsezza	Carestia	Carestia
Death	Mort	Morte	Muerte	Morte
Debate	Débat	Discussione	Disputa	Debate
Debt	Dette	Débito	Deuda	Divida
Debtor	Débiteur	Debitore	Deudor	Devedor
Decay	Ruine	Decadenza	Decadencia	Decadencia
Deceit	Tromperie	Inganno	Engaño	Engano
Decision	Décision	Decisione	Decision	Decisão
Deck	Pont	Ponte	Puente	Coberta
Decline	Déclin ; décadence	Declivio	Declinacion	Declinação
Decree	Décret	Decreto	Decreto	Decreto
Deed	Action ; acte	Atto ; azione	Acto ; accion	Escritura ; accção
Deepness	Profondeur	Profondità	Profundidad	Profundidade
Default	Défaut	Falta	Falta	Falta
Defeat	Défaite	Rotta	Derrota	Derrota
Defence	Défense	Difesa	Defensa	Defesa
Degree	Degré	Grado	Grado	Grao

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Delay	Délai	Ritardo	Tardanza	Demora
Delicacy	Délicatesse	Delicatezza	Delicadeza	Delicadeza
Delight	Délice	Delizia	Delicia	Deleite
Delivery	Remise	Cessione ; liberazione	Entrega	Entrega
Demand	Demande	Domanda	Demanda	Demanda
Democrat	Démocrate	Democratico	Democratico	Democratico
Demon	Démon	Demonio	Demonio	Demonio
Den	Repaire ; antre	Antro	Caverna ; antro	Caverna
Dentist	Dentiste	Dentista	Dentista	Dentista
Departure	Départ	Partenza	Partida	Partida
Deposit	Dépôt ; séquestré	Depósito	Deposito	Deposito
Depth	Profondeur	Profondità	Profundidad	Profundidade
Descent	Descente ; pente	Discesa	Descension	Descida
Desert	Dessert	Deserto	Desierto	Deserto
Design	Dessein; dessin (drawing)	Disegno	Designio	Designio
Desk	Pupitre ; bureau	Pulpito	Bufete	Bufete
Despair	Désespoir	Disperazione	Desesperacion	Desesperação
Despatch	Dépêche	Dispaccio	Despacho	Despacho
Detection	Découverte	Scoperta	Descubrimiento	Averiguação
Detention	Retard	Ritardo	Detencion	Detenção
Development	Développement	Sviluppo	Manifestacion	Manifestação
Devil	Diable	Diávolo	Diablo	Diabo
Devotion	Dévouement	Devozione	Devucion	Devoção
Dew	Rosée	Rugiada	Rocio	Sereno
Dial	Cadrان	Orologio	Reloj de sol	Relogio do sol
Dialogue	Dialogue	Diálogo	Diálogo	Diálogo
Diameter	Diamètre	Diámetro	Diámetro	Diámetro
Diamond	Diamant	Diamante	Diamante	Diamante
Dice	Dés (die, sing.)	Dado (die) dadi (dice)	Dados (dado, sing.)	Dados (dado, sing.)
Dictionary	Dictionnaire	Dizionario	Diccionario	Diccionario
Diet	Diète ; régime	Diéta	Dieta	Dieta
Difficulty	Peine	Difficoltà	Dificultad	Difficuldade

# VOCABULARY.

347

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Dimness	Obscurité	Oscurità	Oscurecimiento	Escuridade
Dip	Plongement	Immersione	Sumersion	Submersão
Diplomatist	Diplomate	Diplomatico	Diplomatico	Diplomatico
Dirt	Saleté ; boue	Fango	Cieno	Lama
Discount	Escompte	Sconto	Descuento	Desconto
Disease	Maladie	Malattia	Enfermedad	Doença
Dish	Plat	Piatto	Plato	Prato
Distance	Distance	Distanza	Distancia	Distancia
Ditch	Fossé	Fosso	Zanja	Fosso
Dock	Bassin	Bacino	Dique	Estaleiro
Doctor	Docteur ; médecin	Dottore	Médico	Medico
Dog	Chien	Cane	Perro	Cão
Doll	Poupée	Bámbola	Muñeca	Boneca
Door	Porte	Porta	Puerta	Porta
Dot	Point	Punto	Tilde	Ponto
Dove	Colombe	Colombo	Palomo	Pombo
Dozen	Douzaine	Dozzina	Docena	Duzia
Draft	Traite	Cambiale	Tiro	Ordem
Dram	Dragme	Dramma	Dracma	Drachma
Draught	Potion	Pozione	Pocion	Poção
Drawer	Tiroir	Tiratojo	Gaveta	Gaveta
Dream	Songe	Sogno	Sueño	Sonho
Dress	Vêtement	Vestito	Vestido	Vestido
Drink	Boisson	Bevanda	Bebida	Bebida
Driver	Conducteur ; cocher	Cocchiere	Cochero	Bolleiro
Drop	Goutte	Goccia	Gota	Gotta
Drug	Drogue	Droga	Droga	Droga
Drum	Tambour	Tamburo	Tambor	Tambor
Drunkard	Ivrogne	Ubriacone	Borrachon	Beberrão
Dryness	Sécheresse	Siccità	Sequedad	Seccura
Duck	Canard	Ánitra	Ánade	Adem
Due	Droit	Diritto	Derecho	Direito

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Dunce	Ignorant	Ignorante	Tonto	Tolo
Duplicate	Double	Duplicato	Duplicado	Duplicata
Dust	Poussière	Pólvere	Polvo	Poeira
Dwarf	Nain	Nano	Enano	Anão
Dye	Teint	Tintura	Tinte	Tinta
Eagle	Aigle	Áquila	Águila	Aguia
Ear	Oreille	Orecchio	Oreja	Orelha
Earth	Terre	Terra	Tierra	Terra
Earthenware	Poterie	Majolica	Loza	Louça
Earthquake	Tremblement de terre	Terremuoto	Terremoto	Terremoto
Ease	Aise	Riposo	Reposo	Tranquillidade
East	Orient	Oriente	Oriente	Oriente
Easter	Pâques	Pasqua	Pascua	Paschoa
Eccentricity	Originalité	Originalità	Excentricidad	Eccentricidade
Edge	Bord	Márgine	Margen	Borda
Eel	Anguille	Anguilla	Anguila	Anguia
Egg	Œuf	Uovo	Huevo	Ovo
Elbow	Coude	Gómito	Codo	Cotovelo
Elephant	Éléphant	Elefante	Elefante	Elephante
Elm	Orme	Olmo	Olmo	Olmo
Embarkation	Embarquement	Imbarco	Embarcacion	Embarque
Emblem	Emblème	Emblema	Emblema	Emblema
Embrace	Embrasement	Abbraccio	Abrazo	Abraço
Embroidery	Broderie	Ricamo	Bordadura	Recamo
Emerald	Émeraude	Smeraldo	Esmeralda	Esmeralda
Emigrant	Émigré	Emigrante	Emigrado	Emigrante
Enclosure	Enclos	Ricinto	Cercado	Cêrca
End	Bout ; fin	Fine	Fin	Fim
Endeavour	Effort	Tentativo	Esfuerzo	Esforço
Engagement	Occupation	Impegno	Empeño	Empenho

# VOCABULARY.

349

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Engine	Machine	Macchina	Máquina	Machina
Engineer	Ingénieur	Ingegnere	Ingeniero	Enginheiro
Engraver	Graveur	Incisore	Grabador	Gravador
Ensign	Enseigne	Insegna	Insignia	Insignia
Entertainment	Divertissement	Divertimento	Diversion	Diversão
Entrance	Entrée	Entrata	Entrada	Entrada
Envy	Envie	Invidia	Euvidia	Inveja
Equal	Égal	Uguale	Igual	Igual
Error	Erreur ; faute	Errore	Error	Erro
Escape	Délivrance ; fuite	Fuga ; scappata	Escapada	Fuga
Escort	Escorte	Scorta	Escolta	Escolta
Essence	Essence	Essenza	Esencia	Essencia
Establishment	Établissement	Stabilimento	Establecimiento	Estabelecimento
Estate	État ; fortune	Stato	Estado	Estado
Eve	Veille	Vigilia	Vigilia	Vespera
Evening	Soir	Sera	El anochecer	Noitezinha
Event	Évènement	Evento	Evento	Evento
Evil	Mal	Male	Mal	Maldade
Examination	Vérification	Esame	Examen	Exame
Example	Exemple : modèle	Esempio	Ejemplo	Exemplo
Excess	Excès	Eccesso	Exceso	Excesso
Exchange	Change ; bourse	Cambio ; borsa	Cambio	Cambio
Exchequer	Trésor	Tesoro	Tesoreria	Fisco ; thesouro
Excitement	Excitation	Eccitamento	Excitacion	Excitamento
Excuse	Excuse	Scusa	Excusa	Escusa
Executioner	Bourreau	Carnéfice	Verdugo	Algôz
Exercise	Exercice ; thème	Esercizio	Ejercicio	Exercicio
Exhibition	Exposition	Esposizione	Exhibicion	Exibiçao
Exile	Exil ; exilé	Esilio	Desterrado	Dêsterro
Expansه	Étendue	Espansione	Expansion	Expansão
Expense	Dépense	Spesa	Gasto	Despeza

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE
Export	Exportation	Esportazione	Exportacion	Exportação
Express	Exprès	Espresso	Expreso	Expresso
Extent	Étendue	Estensione	Extension	Extensão
Exterior	Extérieur	Esteriore	Exterior	Exterior
Extinguisher	Eteignoir	Estinguitore	Apagador	Apagador
Eye	Œil (pl. yeux)	Occhio	Ojo	Olho
Eyebrow	Sourcil	Ciglio	Ceja	Sobrancelha
Eyelid	Paupière	Palpebra	Párpado	Palpebra
Fable	Fable	Favola	Fábula	Fabula
Face	Face ; visage ; figure	Faccia	Cara	Cara
Fact	Fait	Fatto	Hecho	Facto
Factor	Facteur	Fattore	factor	Factor
Factory	Factorie	Fabbrica	Factoria	Feitoria
Fagot	Fagot	Fascina	Haz	Feixe
Failure	Défaut ; faillite	Fallimento ; mancanza	Falta ; quiebra	Falta ; quebra
Fainting	Évanouissement	Svenimento	Desmayo	Desmaio
Fair	Foire	Fiera	Feria	Feira
Fairness	Justice ; probité	Giustizia ; onestà	Honradez	Honra
Fairy	Fée	Fate	Hada	Fada
Faith	Foi	Fede	Fé	Fé
Faithfulness	Fidélité	Fedeltà	Fidelidad	Fidelidade
Fall	Chute	Caduta	Caida	Descahida
Falseness	Fausseté	Falsità	Perfidia	Perfidia
Fame	Renommée	Fama	Fama	Fama
Family	Famille	Famiglia	Familia	Familia
Fan	Éventail	Ventaglio	Abanico	Abano
Fancy	Idée ; Imagination	Idea ; immaginazione	Idea ; imaginacion	Imaginação
Fare	Course ; menu	Prezzo ; nolo ; lista	Paga ; pasaje	Pagamento
Farm	Ferme	Masseria	Hacienda	Casal
Farmer	Fermier	Affittajuolo	Hacendado	Lavrador

# VOCABULARY.

351

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Farness	Distance	Distanza	Distancia	Distancia
Farrrier	Maréchal-ferrant	Veterinario	Herrador	Ferrador
Fashion	Mode ; façon	Moda	Moda	Moda
Fastness	Fermeté	Fermezza	Firmeza	Firmeza
Fat	Gras	Grasso	Gordo	Gordura ; tina
Fate	Destin ; sort	Destino	Destino	Destino
Father	Père	Padre	Padre	Pai
Father-in-law	Beau-père	Suocero	Suegro	Sogro
Fatigue	Fatigue	Fatica	Fatiga	Fadiga
Fault	Faute	Colpa	Culpa	Falta
Favour	Faveur ; grace	Favore	Favor	Favor
Fear	Peur ; crainte	Paura	Miedo	Medo
Feast	Fête ; festin	Festa	Festin	Festa
Feat	Exploit ; action	Fatto	Hecho	Feito
Feather	Plume	Piuma	Pluma	Pluma
Feature	Trait	Fattezza	Faccion	Feição
February	Février	Febbrajo	Febrero	Fevereiro
Fee	Émolumment	Emolumento	Gratificacion	Emolumento
Feebleness	Faiblesse	Debolezza	Debilidad	Debilidade
Feeling	Sentiment	Sentimento	Sentimiento	Sentimento
Felon	Criminel	Criminale	Reo	Reo
Felt	Feutre	Feltro	Fieltro	Feltro
Female	Femelle	Femmina	Hembra	Femea
Fencing	Escrime	Scherma	Esgrima	Esgrima
Fender	Garde-feu	Arnese di ferro	Enrejado	Amparo
Fern	Fougère	Felce	Helecho	Féto
Fever	Fièvre	Febbre	Fiebre	Febre
Field	Champ	Campo	Campo	Campo
Fig	Figue	Fico	Higo	Figo
Fight	Combat	Conflitto	Combate	Combate
Figure	Figure ; forme	Figura	Figura	Figura
File	Fil ; lime	Fila ; lima	Fila ; lima	Fila ; lima

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Filter	Filtre	Filtro	Filtro	Filtro
Fine	Amende	Multa	Multa	Mulcta
Fineness	Finesse ; délicatesse	Finezza	Finezza	Fineza
Finery	Luxe	Lusso	Lustre	Gala
Finger	Doigt	Dito	Dedo	Dedo
Fir	Sapin	Abete	Abeto	Abeto
Fire	Feu	Fuoco	Fuego	Fogo
Firework	Feu d'artifice	Fuoco d'artifizio	Fuego artificial	Fogo artificial
Fish	Poisson	Pesce	Pez	Peixe
Fisher	Pêcheur	Pescatore	Pescador	Pescador
Fist	Poing	Pugno	Puño	Punho
Fit	Accès	Accesso	Acceso	Accesso
Flame	Flamme	Fiamma	Llama	Flamma
Flash	Éclair	Baleno	Relampago	Relampago
Flatness	Platitude	Pianezza	Llanura	Planeza
Flatterer	Flatteur	Adulatore	Adulador	Lisonjeiro
Flavour	Arome ; parfum	Aroma	Sabor	Sabor
Flax	Lin	Lino	Lino	Linho
Flea	Puce	Pulce	Pulga	Pulga
Fleet	Flotte	Flotta	Flota ; armada	Armada
Flesh	Chair ; viande	Carne	Carne	Carne
Flight	Fuite ; vol	Fuga	Fuga	Fugida
Flint	Caillou	Selce	Pederal	Pederneira
Flock	Troupeau	Greggia	Manada	Rebanho
Flood	Fleuve ; torrent	Diluvio	Diluvio	Cheia
Floor	Étage	Piano	Piso	Andar
Flour	Farine	Farina	Harina	Farinha
Flower	Fleur	Fiore	Flor	Flor
Flute	Flûte	Fláuto	Flauta	Frauta
Fly	Mouche	Mosca	Mosca	Mosca
Fog	Brouillard	Nebbia	Niebla	Nevoa
Fold	Pli	Piega	Pliegue	Dobra

# VOCABULARY.

353

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Follower	Partisan	Seguace	Seguidor	Sequaz
Folly	Folie	Pazzia	Locura	Loucura
Food	Nourriture	Alimento; cibo	Comida	Alimento
Fool	Fou; sot	Sciocco	Tonto	Tolo
Foot	Pied	Piede	Pié	Pé
Footman	Laquais	Servitore	Lacayo	Lacaio
Force	Force; vigueur	Forza	Fuerza	Força
Ford	Gué	Guado	Vado	Vao
Forefinger	L'index	Indice	Indice	Index
Forehead	Front	Fronte	Frente	Testa
Forfeit	Amende	Ammenda	Multa	Mulcta
Forge	Forge	Fucina	Fragua	Forja
Forger	Faussaire	Falsario	Falsario	Falsificador
Forgetting	Oubli	Obbligo	Olvido	Esquecimento
Forgiveness	Pardon; grâce	Perdono	Perdon	Perdão
Fork	Fourchette	Forchetta	Tenedor	Garfo
Form	Forme	Forma	Forma	Forma
Fortune	Fortune	Fortuna	Fortuna	Fortuna
Fountain	Fontaine	Fonte	Fuente	Fonte
Fowl	Poule; volaille	Pollo	Ave	Ave
Fox	Renard	Volpe	Zorra	Rapoza
Frame	Cadre; monture	Incassatura; cornice	Bastidor	Bastidor
Fraud	Fraude	Frode	Fraude	Fraude
Freight	Nolis	Nolo	Flete	Frete
French	Français	Francese	Frances	Francez
Friday	Vendredi	Venerdì	Viérnes	Sesta feira
Friend	Ami	Amico	Amigo	Amigo
Fright	Effroi	Spavento	Espanto	Espanto
Fringe	Frange; bord	Frangia	Franja	Franja
Frock	Froc; habit	Abito	Bata	Casaca
Frog	Grenouille	Ranocchio	Rana	Ran
Front	Front; face	Fronte	Frente	Fronte

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Frost	Gelée	Gelo	Hielo	Geda
Froth	Écume	Spuma	Espuma	Escuma
Frown	Froncement de sourcils	Cipiglio	Ceño	Carranca
Fruit	Fruit	Frutto	Fruta	Fruta
Fun	Gaieté; amusement	Divertimento	Diversion	Brinco
Fund	Fond	Fondo	Fondo	Fundo
Funeral	Funérailles; enterrement	Funerale	Funeral; entierro	Funeral
Funnel	Entonnoir	Imbuto	Embudo	Funil
Fur	Fourrure	Pelliccia	Pelo	Pelle
Furnace	Fourneau	Fornace	Horno	Fornalha
Furniture	Mobilier; ameublement	Mobiglio	Muebles	Mobilia
Furze	Genêt	Ginestra	Tojo	Tojo
Future	Futur; avenir	Futuro; avvenire	Futuro; venidero	Futuro
Gain	Gain; profit	Guadagno	Ganancia	Ganho
Gallop	Galop	Galoppo	Galope	Galope
Gallows	Gibet	Forca	Horca	Forca
Game	Jeu; gibier	Giuoco; cacciagione	Juego; caza	Jogo; caça
Gaming	Jeu	Giuoco	Juego	Jogo
Garden	Jardin	Giardino	Jardin	Jardim
Garland	Guirlande	Ghirlanda	Guirnalda	Grinalda
Garter	Jarretière	Legaccia	Jarretera	Liga
Gas	Gaz	Gas	Gas	Gaz
Gate	Porte	Porta	Puerta	Porta
Gauze	Gaze	Velo	Gasa	Volante
Gender	Genre; sexe	Genere; sesso	Género	Genero
General	Général	Generale	General	General
Genius	Génie	Genio	Genio	Genio
German	Allemand	Tedesco; allemanno	Aleman	Allemão
Ghost	Revenant	Spirito; spettro	Espectro	Espirito
Giant	Géant	Gigante	Gigante	Gigante
Giddiness	Vertige	Vertigine	Vértigo	Vertigem

# VOCABULARY.

355

## ENGLISH.

Gift  
Gig  
Gin  
Ginger  
Girdle  
Girl  
Gladness  
Glass  
Globe  
Gloom  
Glory  
Glove  
Glue  
Goat  
Godmother ; god-father  
Godson  
Gold  
Goldsmith  
Goodness  
Goose  
Gooseberry  
Gospel  
Gout  
Governor  
Gown  
Grace  
Grammar  
Grant  
Grape  
Grass  
Grate

## FRENCH.

Don ; cadeau  
Cabriolet  
Genièvre  
Gingembre  
Ceinture  
Fille  
Joie ; allégresse  
Verre ; miroir (looking)  
Globe  
Obscurité  
Gloire  
Gant  
Glu  
Chévre  
Marraine ; parrain

## ITALIAN.

Dono  
Carrettella  
Gin  
Zénzero  
Cintura  
Raggazza  
Gioja  
Vetro ; specchio  
Globo  
Oscurità  
Gloria  
Guanto  
Colla  
Capro  
Madrina (compare patrino)

## SPANISH.

Regalo  
Calesa  
Ginebra  
Jengibre  
Cinto  
Muchacha  
Alegria  
Vidrio ; espejo  
Globo  
Oscuridad  
Gloria  
Guante  
Cola  
Cabra  
Madrina ; padrino

## PORTUGUESE.

Dadiva  
Carrinho  
Genebra  
Gingibre  
Cintura  
Menina  
Contentamento  
Vidro ; espelho  
Globo  
Obscuridade  
Gloria  
Luva  
Cola  
Cabra  
Madrinha ; padrinho

Afilhado  
Ouro  
Ourives  
Bondade  
Pato ; ganso  
Uva espim  
Evangelho  
Gota  
Governador  
Toga  
Graça  
Grammatica  
Concessão  
Uva  
Yerba  
Reja

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Grave	Fosse ; tombeau	Fossa ; tomba	Sepultura	Sepultura
Grease	Graisse	Grasso	Grasa	Graxa
Grecian	Grec	Greco	Grego	Grego
Green	Vert	Verde	Verde	Verde
Grief	Chagrin ; douleur	Dolore	Dolor	Tristeza
Groom	Valet	Valletto	Establero	Moço da estrebaria
Ground	Terre	Terra	Tierra	Terra
Guarantee	Garantie	Garanzia	Garantia	Garantia
Guard	Garde	Guardia	Guardia	Guarda
Guest	Hôte	Óspite	Huesped	Hospede
Guide	Guide	Guida	Guia	Guia
Gum	Gomme	Gomma	Goma	Gomma
Gun	Fusil ; canon	Fucile	Fusil ; cañon	Canhão
 Haberdashery	 Mercerie	 Merceria	 Merceria	 Mercearia
Habit	Habitude	Abitudine	Costumbre	Costume
Hail	Grêle	Grándine	Granizo	Granizo
Hair	Cheveu	Capello	Cabello	Cabello
Half	Moitié	Metà	Mitad	Metade
Hall	Salle	Sala	Sala	Sala
Ham	Jambon	Prosciutto	Jamon	Presunto
Hammer	Marteau	Martello	Martillo	Martello
Hamper	Panier	Cesto	Cesto	Canastra
Hand	Main	Mano	Mano	Mão
Handle	Manche	Mánico	Mango	Punho
Hardness	Dureté	Durezza	Dureza	Dureza
Hare	Lièvre	Lepre	Liebre	Lebre
Harm	Mal	Male	Mal	Maldade
Harness	Harnais	Arnese	Guarniciones	Arnez
Harp	Harpe	Árpa	Arpa	Harpa
Harvest	Récolte	Ricolta	Cosecha	Colheita
Haste	Hâte	Fretta	Priesa	Pressa

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Hat	Chapeau	Cappello	Sombrero	Chapeo
Hawk	Faucon	Falcone	Halcon	Falcão
Hay	Foin	Fieno	Heno	Feno
Head	Tête	Testa ; capo	Cabeza	Cabeça
Health	Santé	Salute ; sanità	Salud	Saude
Heap	Masse	Ammasso ; mucchio	Monton	Montão
Hearse	Corbillard	Carro fúnebre	Féretro	Tumba
Heart	Cœur	Cuore	Corazon	Coração
Hearth	Foyer	Focolare	Hogar	Lar
Heat	Chaleur	Calore ; caldo	Calor	Calor
Heaven	Ciel	Cielo	Cielo	Céo
Heaviness	Pesanteur	Peso	Peso	Peso
Hedge	Haie	Siepe	Seto	Sebe
Heel	Talon	Calcagno	Talon	Calcanhar
Height	Hauteur	Altezza	Altura	Altura
Heir	Héritier	Erede	Heredero	Herdeiro
Hell	Enfer	Inferno	Infierno	Inferno
Helm	Gouvernail ; timon	Timone	Timon	Elmo
Help	Secours	Ajuto ; soccorso	Ayuda	Ajuda
Hemp	Chanvre	Cánapa	Cáñamo	Cáñamo
Hen	Poule ; femelle	Gallina	Gallina	Gallinha
Herb	Herbe	Erba	Yerba	Herva
Hill	Colline	Collina	Colina	Monte
Hinge	Gond ; pivot	Arpione ; gânghero	Bisagra	Misagra
Hip	Hanche	Anca	Cadera	Quadril
Hire	Louage	Affitto	Alquiler	Aluguel
Hiss	Siflet	Fischio ; síbilo	Silbido	Assobio
Hit	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Golpe
Hive	Ruche	Alveare	Colmena	Colmêa
Hoax	Canard	Beffa	Burla	Burla
Hole	Trou	Buco	Agujero	Buraco
Holiday	Fête ; vacances (pl.)	Festa ; vacanza	Dia de fiesta	Dia santo

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Home	Logis ; chez soi ; pays	Casa ; pátria	Casa ; patria	Casa ; patria
Honey	Miel	Miele	Miel	Mel
Hood	Capuchon	Cuffia ; cappuccio	Capucha	Capello
Horn	Corne	Corno	Cuerno	Corno
Horse	Cheval	Cavallo	Caballo	Cavallo
Host	Hôte	Óspite	Huesped	Patrão
Hotel	Hôtel	Locanda	Posada	Estalagem
Hour	Heure	Ora	Hora	Hora
House	Maison	Casa	Casa	Casa
Hunting	Chasse	Caccia	Caza	Caça
Hurdle	Fascine	Graticcio	Zarzo	Clausura
Hurry	Hâte	Fretta	Priesa	Pressa
Hurt	Mal	Male	Mal	Mal
Husband	Mari	Marito	Marido	Marido
Ice	Glace	Ghiaccio	Hielo	Gelo
Idea	Idée	Idea	Idea	Idea
Idleness	Oisiveté	Ozio	Pereza	Ociosidade
Ill	Mal ; malheur	Male	Mal	Maldade
Image	Image	Immagine	Imagen	Imagen
Importation	Importation	Importazione	Importacion	Importação
Improvement	Amélioration	Miglioramento	Mejoria	Melhoramento
Incense	Encens	Incenso	Incienso	Incenso
Inch	Pouce	Dito	Pulgada	Pollegada
Income	Revenu	Réndita	Renta	Renda
Increase	Augmentation	Aumento	Aumento	Augmento
Individual	Individu	Individuo	Individuo	Individuo
Infant	Enfant	Infante	Infante	Infante
Ingots	Lingot	Verga	Barra	Barra
Injury	Injure ; blessure	Ingiuria ; danno	Daño	Injuria
Ink	Encre	Inchiostro	Tinta	Tinta
Inkstand	Encrier	Calamajo	Tintero	Tinteiro

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTRUGUESE.
Inn	Auberge	Albergo	Posada	Estalagem
Inquiry	Demande ; enquête	Domanda	Pesquisa	Inquirição
Insect	Insecte	Insetto	Insecto	Insecto
Insolvent	Débiteur ; insolvable	Insolvente	Insolvente	Quebrado
Insult	Insulte	Insulto	Insulto	Insulto
Insurance	Assurance	Assicurazione	Seguro	Seguro
Interference	Intervention	Intervenzione	Intervencion	Interposição
Interruption	Interruption	Interruzione	Interrupcion	Interrupção
Inundation	Inondation	Inondazione	Inundacion	Inundação
Invalid	Invalide	Infermo	Invalido	Invalido
Investment	Investiture ; placement	Investitura ; investita	Vestidura; inversion	Investidura
Iron	Fer	Ferro	Hierro	Ferro
Island	Île	Isola	Isla	Ilha
Issue	Issue ; émission	Uscita	Salida	Sahida
Ivory	Ivoire	Avorio	Marfil	Marfim
Ivy	Lierre	Édera ; éllera	Hiedra	Hera
Jackal	Chacal	Jacal	Adiva	Chacal
Jam	Confiture	Conserva	Conserva	Conserva
January	Janvier	Jennajo	Eaero	Janeiro
Jar	Jarre	Giara	Jarra	Jarro
Jasmin	Jasmin	Gelsomino	Jazmin	Jasmim
Jaw	Mâchoire	Mascella	Quijada	Queixada
Jealousy	Jalousie	Gelosia	Zelos	Ciume
Jelly	Gelée	Gelatina	Gelatina	Gelea
Jest	Bon mot ; plaisanterie	Burla ; scherzo	Burla	Burla
Jet	Jais	Ambra nera	Azabache	Azeviche
Jew	Juif (juive, f.)	Ebreo	Judio	Judeo
Jewel	Joyau ; bijou	Gioja ; giojello	Joya	Joia
Joint	Jointure	Giuntura	Coyuntura	Junta
Joke	Plaisanterie	Scherzo	Burla	Burla
Journal	Journal	Giornale	Diario	Jornal

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUES.
Journey	Voyage	Viaggio	Viaje	Jornada
Judge	Juge	Giudice	Juez	Juiz
Jug	Cruche	Boccale	Jarro	Caneca
Juice	Jus	Sugo	Zumo	Succo
July	JUILLET	Luglio	Julio	Julho
Jump	Saut	Salto	Salto	Salto
June	Juin	Giugno	Junio	Junho
Junior	Jeune ; cadet	Cadetto	Menor	Menor
Jury	Jury	Giuri	Jurado	Jurados
Juryman	Juré	Giurato	Juror	Juror
Keel	Quille ; carène	Carena	Quilla	Quilha
Keeper	Garde ; gardien	Guardiano	Guarda	Guarda
Keepsake	Souvenir	Ricordo	Regalo	Regalo
Kennel	Chenil	Canile	Perrera	Casa de Cães
Kernel	Grain ; glande	Grano ; glandolo	Meollo ; pepita	Miollo
Kettle	Chaudière	Caldaja	Caldera	Caldeira
Key	Clef	Chiave	Llave	Chave
Kick	Coup de pied	Calcio	Patada ; coz	Couce
Kid	Chevreau	Capretto	Cabrito	Cabrito
Kidney	Rognon	Rognone	Rifion	Rim
Kind	Espèce ; sorte	Specie ; razza	Especie	Especie
King	Roi	Re	Rey	Rei
Kingdom	Royaume	Regno	Reino	Reino
Kiss	Baiser	Bacio	Beso	Beijo
Knave	Coquin ; valet (at cards)	Birbante ; fanto (at cards)	Picaro ; sota (at cards)	Velhaco ; valete (at cards)
Knee	Genou	Ginocchio	Rodillo	Joelho
Knife	Couteau ; canif (pen)	Coltello ; temperino (pen)	Cuchillo ; cortaplumas (pen)	Faca ; canivete (pen)
Knight	Chevalier	Cavaliere	Caballero	Cavalleiro
Knob	Bosse ; bouton	Bozza ; nodo	Bulto	Nó
Knock	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Pancada
Knot	Noeud	Nodo	Nudo	Nó

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Label	Étiquette	Etichetta	Escola	Letreiro
Labour	Travail	Lavoro	Trabajo	Trabalho
Lace	Dentelle	Gallone	Encaje	Passamane
Lady	Dame	Dama ; signora	Dama ; señora	Senhora
Lake	Lac	Lago	Lago	Lago
Lamb	Agneau	Agnello	Cordero	Cordeiro
Lamp	Lampe	Lampione	Lámpara	Lampada
Land	Terre	Terra	Tierra	Terra
Landing	Débarcadère	Sbarco	Desembarcadero	Desembarcadouro
Landlord	Hôte ; propriétaire	Padrone	Patron	Proprietario
Landscape	Paysage	Paesaggio	Paisaje	Paizagem
Lane	Haie ; ruelle	Vicolo	Callejuela	Beco
Language	Langue	Lingua	Lengua	Lingua
Lantern	Lanterne	Lanterna	Linterna	Lanterna
Lark	Alouette	Allódola	Alondra	Calhandra
Lash	Méche	Sferza	Trailla	Açoute
Last	Dernier ; fin	Fine	Ultimo	Ultimo
Latch	Loquet	Saliscendo	Aldaba	Aldrava
Lath	Latte	Panconcello	Lata	Ripa
Laughter	Rire	Riso	Risa	Risadas
Laundress	Blanchisseuse	Lavandaja	Lavandera	Lavandeira
Laurel	Laurier	Lauro	Laurel	Loureiro
Lavender	Lavande	Lavanda	Lavandula	Alfazema
Law	Loi	Legge	Ley	Lei
Lead	Plomb	Piombo	Plomo	Chumbo
Leader	Chef ; conducteur	Capo ; conduttor	Jefe ; conductor	Guia ; conductor
Leaf	Feuille	Foglio	Hoja	Folha
Leap	Saut	Salto	Salto	Salto
Lease	Terme	Pólizza d'affitto	Arriendo	Arrendamento
Leather	Cuir ; peau	Cuojo	Cuero	Coiro
Leave	Permission	Permesso	Permito	Permissão
Ledger	Grand livre	Libro maestro	Libro mayor	Livro mestre

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Leg	Jambe	Gamba	Pierna	Perna
Legacy	Legs	Legato	Legado	Legado
Leisure	Loisir	Agio	Comodidad	Descanso
Length	Longueur	Lunghezza	Largura	Comprimento
Lentil	Lentille	Lenticchia	Lenteja	Lentilha
Lesson	Leçon	Lezione	Leccion	Lição
Letter	Lettre	Lettera	Carta	Carta
Level	Niveau	Livello	Nivel	Nivel
Lever	Levier	Leva	Palanca	Alavanca
Liability	Responsabilité	Risponsabilità	Responsabilidad	Responsabilidade
Libel	Diffamation	Libello	Libelo	Libello
Library	Bibliothèque	Libreria	Libreria	Livraria
Licorice	Régisserie	Regolizia	Regaliza	Regoliz
Lie	Mensonge	Bugia	Mentira	Mentira
Life	Vie	Vita	Vida	Vida
Light	Lumière	Luce	Luz	Luz
Lightning	Éclair	Baleno	Relámpago	Relampago
Lily	Lis	Giglio	Lirio	Lirio
Limb	Membre	Membro	Miembro	Membro
Lime	Chaux	Calce	Cal	Cal
Line	Ligne	Linea ; riga	Linea	Linha
Lining	Doublure	Fódera	Forro	Forro
Linseed	Graine de lin	Seme di lino	Linaza	Linhaça
Lint	Filasse ; charpie	Filaccia	Hila	Fios
Lip	Lèvre	Labbro	Labio	Labio
Liquid	Liquide	Líquido	Líquido	Líquido
Liver	Foie	Fégato	Hígado	Figado
Livery	Livrée	Livrea	Librea	Libré
Load	Charge	Carico	Carga	Carga
Loadstone	Aimant	Magnete	Iman	Iman
Loaf	Pain	Pane	Pan	Pão
Lock	Serrure	Serratura	Cerraðura	Fechadura

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Lodge	Loge	Loggia	Logia	Loja
Lodger	Locataire	Pigionale	Morador	Morador
Loft	Étage ; grenier	Piano ; soffitto	Piso ; sobrado	Andar ; sobrado
Log	Poutre	Ceppo	Toza	Cepo
Look	Regard	Sguardo	Mirada	Olhar
Lump	Morceau	Pezzo	Pedazo	Pedaço
Luxury	Luxe	Lusso	Lujo	Luxo
Machine	Machine	Macchina	Maquina	Machina
Madness	Folie	Pazzia	Locura	Loucura
Magistrate	Magistrat ; juge	Giudice	Magistrado	Magistrado
Mahogany	Mahogon ; acajou	Maogani	Caoba	Pão magno
Maid	Fille ; vierge	Damigella ; vérgine	Doncella	Donzella
Mail	Malle ; courrier	Valigia	Mala	Mala
Maize	Mais	Grano ; fromentone	Maiz	Maiz
Maker	Createur ; fabriquant	Creatore ; fabbricante	Criador ; fabricante	Creador ; fabricante
Man	Homme	Uomo	Hombre	Homem
Manacles (pl.)	Menottes	Manette	Manillas	Algemas
Management	Gouvernement	Direzione	Manejo	Manejo
Manager	Directeur	Direttore	Director	Director
Manger	Crèche	Mangiatoja	Pesebre	Manjadoura
Manner	Manière ; façon	Maniera	Manera	Maneira
Mantle	Manteau	Manto ; mantello	Manto ; mantilla	Manto
Manufacturer	Fabricant	Manifattore	Fabricante	Fabricante
Manure	Engrais	Letame	Abono	Esterco
Map	Carte	Carta	Mapa	Mappa
Marble	Marbre	Marmo	Marmol	Marmore
March	Marche ; Mars (month)	Marcia ; Marzo (month)	Marcha ; Marzo (month)	Marcha ; Março (month)
Margin	Bord ; marge	Márgine	Margen	Margem
Mark	Marque	Marca	Marca	Marca
Market	Marché	Mercato	Mercado	Mercado
Marriage	Mariage	Matrimonio	Matrimonio	Casamento

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Marsh	Marais	Palude	Pantano	Pantano
Marshal	Maréchal	Maresciallo	Mariscal	Marechal
Mask	Masque	Máschera	Máscara	Mascara
Mason	Maçon	Muratore	Albafil	Pedreiro
Mass	Masse	Massa	Masa ; misa	Massa ; missa
Mast	Mât	Álbero	Palo	Masto
Master	Maître	Maestro	Maestro	Mestre
Mat	Matte	Stoja	Estera	Esteira
Match	Mèche	Miccia	Mecha	Mecha
Matter	Matière ; affaire	Materia	Materia	Materia
Mattress	Matelas	Materasso	Colchon	Colchão
May	Mai	Maggio	Mayo	Maio
Mayor	Maire	Sindaco	Corregidor	Mayor
Meadow	Pré	Prato	Prado	Prado
Meal	Repas ; farine	Pasto ; farina	Comida ; harina	Comida ; farinha
Mean	Moyen	Mezzo	Medio	Meio
Meaning	Signification	Senso ; intenzione	Significacion	Significação
Measles	Rougeole	Rosolia	Sarampion	Sarampo
Measure	Mesure	Misura	Medida	Medida
Meat	Viande	Carne	Carne	Carne
Medal	Médaille	Medaglia	Medalla	Medalha
Medicine	Médecine	Medicina	Medicina	Medicina
Medlar	Nèfle	Nespola	Nispero	Nespera
Medley	Mélange	Miscuglio	Mezcla	Mistura
Meeting	Rencontre	Incontro	Encuentro	Encontro
Member	Membre	Membro	Miembro	Membro
Memory	Mémoire	Memoria	Memoria	Memoria
Merchandize	Marchandises	Mercanzia	Mercancia	Mercancia
Merchant	Négociant	Negoziante	Negociante	Negociante
Mercy	Miséricorde ; grâce	Misericordia	Misericordia	Misericordia
Messenger	Messager	Messaggiere	Mensajero	Mensageiro
Metal	Métal	Metallo	Metal	Metal

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Method	Manière ; ordre	Método	Método	Methodo
Mewing	Miaulement	Il miagolare	Maullar	Miar
Middle	Milieu	Mezzo	Medio	Meio
Midnight	Minuit	Mezza notte	Media noche	Meia noite
Midwife	Sage-femme	Levatrice	Partera	Parteira
Mile	Mille	Miglio	Milla	Milha
Militia	Milice	Milizia	Milicia	Milicia
Milk	Lait	Latte	Leche	Leite
Mill	Moulin	Mulino	Molino	Moinho
Mimic	Mime	Istrione	Mimo	Bufão
Mind	Esprit	Mente	Mente	Mente
Miner	Mineur	Minatore	Minero	Mineiro
Minister	Ministre	Ministro	Ministro	Ministro
Minstrel	Ménestrel	Ministrello	Ministril	Ministrel
Mint	Monnaie ; menthe (herb)	Zecca ; menta (herb)	Casa de moneda ; menta (herb)	Casa de moeda ; hortelan (herb)
Minute	Minute	Minuto	Minuto	Minuto
Mirror	Miroir ; glace	Specchio	Espejo	Espelho
Mischief	Méchanceté	Danno ; male	Daño	Damno
Miser	Avare	Avaro	Avariento	Avarento
Mistress	Maitresse	Padrona	Ama	Ama
Mixture	Mélange	Mistura	Mezcla	Mescla
Mob	Foule	Plebe	Populacho	Canalha
Mockery	Moquerie	Burla	Mofa	Zombaria
Mode	Mode ; façon	Modo	Modo	Modo
Model	Modèle	Modello	Modelo	Modello
Moisture	Humidité	Umidità	Humedad	Humidade
Moment	Moment	Momento	Momento	Momento
Monarch	Monarque	Monarca	Monarca	Monarca
Monday	Lundi	Lunedì	Lunes	Segunda feira
Money	Argent	Moneta ; denaro	Dinero	Dinheiro
Monk	Moine	Mónaco	Monje	Monge

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Monkey	Singe	Scimia	Mono	Macaco
Monopoly	Monopole	Monopolio	Monopolio	Monopolio
Month	Mois	Mese	Mes	Mez
Moon	Lune	Luna	Luna	Lua
Moor	Maure ; lande	Moro ; landa	Moro ; pantano	Mouro ; pantano
Mop	Balais	Retazza	Aljofifa	Lambaz
Morning	Matin	Mattino	Mañana	Manhãa
Morocco	Maroquin	Marochino	Marroquí	Marroquim
Morsel	Morceau	Boccone	Bocado	Bocado
Mortgage	Hypothèque	Ipoteca	Hipoteca	Hypotheca
Moss	Mousse	Musco	Musgo	Musgo
Mother	Mère	Madre	Madre	Mãi
Mountain	Montagne	Montagna	Montaña	Montanha
Mountaineer	Montagnard	Montanaro	Montañes	Montanhez
Mountebank	Charlatan	Ciarlatano	Charlatan	Charlatão
Mourning	Deuil	Lutto	Luto	Luto
Mouse	Souris	Sorcio	Raton	Rato
Mouth	Bouche	Bocca	Boca	Bocca
Mud	Boue ; fange	Fango	Fango	Lama
Muff	Manchon	Manicotto	Manguito	Regalo
Mulberry	Mûre	Mora	Mora	Amora
Mule	Mulet ; mule	Mulo	Mulo	Mula
Murder	Meurtre	Omicidio	Asesinato	Assassinio
Muscle	Muscle	Múscolo	Músculo	Musculo
Museum	Musée	Museo	Museo	Museo
Mushroom	Champignon	Fungo	Hongo	Fungo
Music	Musique	Musica	Musica	Musica
Musk	Musc	Muschio	Musco	Almiscar
Musket	Fusil	Schioppo	Mosquete	Mosquete
Muslin	Mousseline	Mussolina	Muselina	Musselina
Mustard	Moutarde	Mostarda	Mostaza	Mostarda
Mutton	Mouton	Castrato	Carnero	Carneiro

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Muzzle	Museau	Bocca ; muso	Boca	Bocca
Mystery	Mystère	Mistero	Misterio	Mysterio
Nail	Ongle ; clou	Unghia ; chiodo	Uña ; clavo	Unha ; cravo
Nakedness	Nudité	Nudità	Desnudez	Nudez
Name	Nom	Nome	Nombre	Nome
Narrowness	Étroitesse	Strettezza	Estrechez	Estreiteza
Native	Natif ; naturel	Nativo ; naturale	Natural	Natural
Nativity	Naissance	Natività	Nacimiento	Natividade
Navy	Marine	Marina	Marina	Marinha
Neatness	Propreté	Pulitezza	Aseo	Aceio
Neck	Cou	Collo	Cuello	Pescoço
Necklace	Collier	Collana	Collar	Collar
Need	Besoin	Bisogno	Necesidad	Necessidade
Needle	Aiguille	Ago	Aguja	Agulha
Negro	Négre	Negro ; nero	Negro	Negro
Neigh	Hennissement	Nitrito	Relincho	Rincho
Neighbour	Voisin	Vicino	Vecino	Vizinho
Neighbourhood	Voisinage	Vicinanza	Vecindad	Vizinhança
Nerve	Nerf	Nervo	Nervio	Nervo
Net	Filet	Rete	Red	Rede
News	Nouvelles	Notizia	Noticia	Novidades
Newspaper	Journal	Giornale	Gaceta	Gazeta
Nicety	Finesse	Esaltezza	Exactitud	Exacção
Night	Nuit	Notte	Noche	Noite
Nobility	Noblesse	Nobilà	Nobleza	Nobreza
Nobleman	Noble ; gentilhomme	Nobile	Noble	Nobre
Nod	Salut	Segno	Cabeceo	Aceno
Noise	Bruit	Strepito	Ruido	Bulha
Noon	Midi	Mezzodì	Mediodia	Meio dia
Noose	Noeud coulant	Laccio	Lazo	Laço
North	Nord	Nord ; norte	Norte	Norte

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Nose	Nez	Naso	Nariz	Nariz
Nosegay	Bouquet	Mazzetto	Ramillete	Ramalhete
Notary	Notaire	Notajo	Notario	Notario
Note	Note ; billet	Nota	Nota	Nota
Notice	Observation ; avis	Notizia	Noticia	Noticia
Notion	Idée	Idea	Idea	Idea
Novel	Roman	Romanzo	Novela	Novella
Novelist	Romancier	Novellista	Novelador	Novelista
Novelty	Nouveauté	Novità	Novedad	Novidade
November	Novembre	Novembre	Noviembre	Novembro
Nuisance	Incommodité	Incomodo ; seccatura	Molestia	Descommodo
Number	Nombre ; numéro	Numero	Numero	Numero
Nun	Nonne ; religieuse	Mónaca	Monja	Freira
Nurse	Nourrice ; bonne	Nutrice	Ama	Ama
Nut	Noix ; noisette	Noce	Nuez	Noz
Nut-crackers	Casse-noisette	Acciaccanoci	Cascanueces	Quebra-nozes
Nutmeg	Muscade	Noce moscada	Nuez Moscada	Noz moscada
Oak	Chêne	Quercia	Encina	Carvalho
Oar	Rame	Remo	Remo	Remo
Oat	Avoine	Avena	Avena	Avêa
Oath	Serment	Giuramento	Juramento	Juramento
Object	Objet	Oggetto	Objeto	Objecto
Objection	Objection	Obbiezione	Objencion	Objecção
Oblivion	Oubli	Obbligo	Olvido	Esquecimento
Obstacle	Obstacle	Ostáculo	Obstaculo	Obstaculo
Obstinacy	Opiniâtreté	Ostinazione	Obstinacion	Obstinação
Occasion	Occasion	Occasione	Ocasion	Occasião
Occupant	Possesseur	Occupante	Ocupante	Possessor
October	Octobre	Ottobre	Octubre	Outubro
Oculist	Oculiste	Oculista	Oculista	Oculista
Odour	Odeur ; parfum	Odore	Olor	Odor

## VOCABULARY.

## ENGLISH.

Offence  
Offer  
Office  
Officer  
Oil  
Ointment  
Oldness  
Olive  
Omen  
Omittance  
Onion  
Opal  
Opening  
Opera-glass  
Opponent  
Optician  
Orange  
Orator  
Orchard  
Orchestra  
Order  
Organ  
Origin  
Ornament  
Orphan  
Otter  
Ottoman  
Ounce  
Outcast; outlaw  
Outrider  
Outset  
Outside

## FRENCH.

Offense ; injure  
Offre  
Charge ; bureau  
Officier  
Huile  
Onguent  
Vieillesse  
Olive  
Augure  
Omission  
Ognon  
Opale  
Ouverture  
Lorgnette  
Adversaire  
Opticien  
Orange  
Orateur  
Verger  
Orchestre  
Ordre ; mandat  
Organe  
Origine  
Ornement  
Orphelin  
Loutre  
Ottoman ; divan  
Once  
Proscrit  
Piqueur  
Début  
Dehors ; extérieur

## ITALIAN.

Offesa ; ingiuria  
Offerta  
Ufficio ; banco  
Ufficiale  
Olio  
Unguento  
Vecchiezza  
Oliva  
Augurio

## SPANISH.

Ofensa  
Oferta  
Oficio ; oficina  
Oficial  
Aceite  
Unguento  
Vejez  
Oliva  
Agüero

## PORTUGUESE.

Offensa  
Offerta  
Oficio ; secretaria  
Official  
Azeite  
Unguento  
Velhice  
Azeitona  
Agouro

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Oven	Fournée	Forno	Horno	Forno
Overflowing	Débordement	Inondazione	Inundacion	Inundaçao
Overlooker	Inspecteur	Soprantendente	Inspector	Superintendente
Owl	Hibou	Civetta	Lechuza	Bufo
Owner	Propriétaire	Proprietario	Proprietario	Proprietario
Ox	Bœuf	Bue	Buey	Boi
Oyster	Huitre	Ostrica	Ostra	Ostra
Pace	Pas	Passo	Paso	Passo
Package	Paquet	Collo	Fardo	Fardo
Packet (boat)	Paquebot	Pacchebotto	Paquebote	Paquete
Padlock	Cadenas	Lucchetto	Candado	Cadeado
Page	Page	Paggio ; Página	Paje ; página	Pagem ; pagina
Pail	Seau	Secchia	Cubo	Balde
Pain	Peine ; douleur	Dolore	Dolor	Dôr
Paint	Couleur	Colore	Color	Côr
Painting	Peinture	Pittura	Pintura	Pintura
Pair	Paire	Pajo	Par	Par
Palate	Goût	Gusto	Paladar ; gusto	Paladar
Paleness	Pâleur	Pallore	Palidez	Pallidez
Palm	Paume ; palmier (tree)	Palma	Palma	Palma
Pamphlet	Brochure	Opúscolo	Folleto	Folheto
Panel	Panneau	Quadrello	Tablero	Almofada
Panic	Panique	Pánico	Pánico	Panico
Pannier	Panier	Paniere ; cesta	Cesto	Cesto
Pantry	Office	Dispensa	Despensa	Despensa
Paper	Papier	Carta	Papel	Papel
Parade	Parade	Parata	Parada	Parada
Paradise	Paradis	Paradiso	Paraiso	Paraiso
Parallel	Parallèle	Parallelo	Paralelo	Paralelo
Parcel	Paquet	Pacchetto	Paquete	Envoltorio
Parchment	Parchemin	Pergamena	Pergamino	Pergaminho

# VOCABULARY.

371

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Pardon	Pardon	Perdono	Perdon	Perdão
Park	Parc	Parco	Parque	Parque
Parliament	Parlement	Parlamento	Parlamento	Parlamento
Parlour	Parloir	Salotto	Sala	Sala
Parsley	Persil	Petrosello	Perejil	Perrexil
Parson	Curé	Curato	Cura	Cura
Part	Partie	Parte	Parte	Parte
Parting	Séparation	Separazione	Separacion	Separacão
Partition	Division	Divisione	Division	Divisão
Partner	Associé	Socio	Socio	Socio
Party	Parti	Parte	Parte	Parte
Passage	Passage	Passaggio	Pasaje	Passagem
Passenger	Passager	Passeggiiero	Pasajero	Passageiro
Passport	Passe-port	Passaporto	Pasaporte	Passaporte
Passion	Passion ; colère	Passione	Pasion	Paixão
Pasteboard	Carton	Cartone	Carton	Papelão
Pastry	Pâtisserie	Pasticceria	Pastereria	Pasteleria
Pasture	Pâture ; pâturage	Pastura	Pastura	Pasto
Pasty	Pâté	Pasticcio	Pastel	Pastel
Patent	Brevet	Patente	Patente	Patente
Path	Sentier	Sentiero	Senda	Passagem
Patten	Patin	Zoccolo	Galocha	Chapim
Pattern	Modèle ; échantillon	Modello	Modelo	Modelo
Pause	Pause	Pausa	Pausa	Pausa
Pavement	Pavé	Lástrico	Pavimento	Calçada
Paw	Patte	Zampa	Garra	Garra
Pawn	Gage ; pion	Pegno ; pedina	Prenda ; peon	Penhor ; pião
Pay	Paye ; solde	Paga ; soldo	Paga ; sueldo	Paga ; soldo
Payment	Payement	Pagamento	Pagamento	Pagamento
Pea	Pois	Pisello	Guisante	Ervilha
Peace	Paix	Pace	Paz	Paz
Peach	Pêche	Pesco	Melocoton	Pecego

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Peacock	Paon	Pavone	Pavon	Pavão
Peal	Coup	Rumore	Estruendo	Estrondo
Pear	Poire	Pera	Pera	Pera
Pearl	Perle	Perla	Perla	Perola
Peasant	Paysan	Contadino	Aldeano	Camponez
Pebble	Caillou	Selce	Guijarro	Seixo
Pedal	Pédale	Pedale	Pedal	Pedal
Pedlar	Colporteur	Merciajuolo	Buhonero	Bofarinheiro
Peel	Écorce	Scorza	Cáscara	Casca
Peer	Pair	Pari	Par	Par
Peg	Cheville	Caviglia	Clavija	Cavilha
Pen	Plume	Penna	Pluma	Penna
Pencil	Crayon	Lapis	Lapiz	Lapiz
People	Gens	Gente	Gente	Gente
Pepper	Poivre	Pepe	Pimienta	Pimenta
Perch	Perche	Pértica	Pértica	Perca
Perfume	Parfum	Profumo	Perfume	Perfume
Period	Période	Periodo	Periodo	Periodo
Perjury	Parjurie	Spergiuro	Perjurio	Perjurio
Persian	Perse	Persiano	Persiano	Persiano
Person	Personne	Persona	Persona	Pessoa
Perusal	Lecture	Lettura	Lectura	O ler
Pest	Peste	Peste	Peste	Peste
Pestle	Pilon	Pestello	Majadero	Mão do gral
Pet	Favori	Favorite	Favorite	Favorito
Petition	Pétition ; prière	Petizione	Peticion	Petição
Picture	Tableau	Pittura	Pintura	Pintura
Pie	Pâte ; tourte	Pasticcio	Pastel	Pastelão
Piece	Morceau	Pezzo	Pedazo	Pedaço
Pier	Jetée	Molo	Muelle	Molhe
Pig	Cochon	Porcello	Puerco	Leitão
Pigeon	Pigeon	Piccione	Pichon	Pombo

## VOCABULARY.

## ENGLISH.

Pike  
Pile  
Pilgrim  
Pill  
Pillar  
Pillow  
Pilot  
Pin  
Pinch  
Pine  
Pine-apple  
Pipe  
Pirate  
Pistol  
Pit  
Pitch  
Pitcher  
Pith  
Pity  
Placard  
Place  
Plait  
Plan  
Plane  
Planet  
Plank  
Plant  
Plate  
Platform  
Play  
Player  
Plea

## FRENCH.

Pique  
Tas ; amas  
Pélerin  
Pilule  
Colonne  
Oreiller  
Pilote  
Épinglé  
Pinçon  
Pin  
Ananas  
Pipe ; tuyau  
Pirate  
Pistolet  
Fosse  
Poix  
Cruche  
Mocelle  
Pitié  
Affiche  
Place  
Pli  
Plan ; projet  
Plane ; rabot  
Planète  
Planche  
Plante  
Assiette  
Plate-forme  
Jeu  
Joueur  
Excuse ; défense

## ITALIAN.

Picca  
Mucchio  
Pellegrino  
Pillola  
Colonna

## SPANISH.

Pica  
Montón  
Peregrino  
Pildora  
Coluna

## PORTUGUESE.

Pique  
Montão  
Peregrino  
Pilula  
Pilar

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Pleader	Plaideur	Avvocato	Abogado	Advogado
Pleasure	Plaisir	Piacere	Placer	Prazer
Pledge	Gage	Pegno	Prenda	Prenda
Plot	Plan ; intrigue	Trama	Trama	Enredo
Plough	Charrue	Aratro	Arado	Arado
Plug	Tampon	Piuolo	Tapon	Tapulho
Plum	Prune	Prugna	Ciruela	Ameixa
Plumber	Plombier	Piombajo	Plomero	Chumbeiro
Plummet	Plomb	Piombo	Plomada	Prumo
Pocket	Poche	Tasca	Faltriquera	Algibeira
Poem	Poëme	Poema	Poema	Poema
Poetry	Poésie	Poesia	Poesia	Poesia
Point	Point	Punta	Punta	Ponto
Pointer (dog)	Chien d'arrêt	Cane da fermo	Perro de punta	Cão perdigueiro
Poison	Poison	Veleno	Veneno	Veneno
Poker	Tisonnier	Attizzatojo	Hurgon	Ferro de aticar
Pole	Bâton	Palo	Palo	Pao
Policy	Police	Pólizza	Póliza	Apolice
Pomatum	Pommade	Pomata	Pomada	Pomada
Pomegranate	Grenade	Melagranata	Granada	Romeira
Pond	Étang	Stagno	Estanque	Tanque
Pope	Pape	Pápa	Papa	Papa
Porcelain	Porcelaine	Porcellana	Porcelana	Porcelana
Porch	Portique	Pórtico	Pórtico	Alpendre
Porcupine	Porc-épic	Porco spino	Puerco espin	Porco espinho
Pork	Porc	Carne de porco	Tocino	Carne de porco
Port	Port	Porto	Puerto	Porto
Porter	Porteur	Facchino	Portero	Porteiro
Portrait	Portrait	Ritratto	Retrato	Retrato
Post	Poste; courier	Posto ; corriere	Puesto ; posta	Posto ; posta
Postage	Port de lettre	Porto di lettere	Porte de carta	Porte de cartas
Posture	Pose; position	Postura	Postura	Postura

# VOCABULARY.

375

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Pot	Pot	Vaso	Marmita	Pote
Potato	Pomme de terre	Patata	Patata	Batata
Poultice	Cataplasme	Cataplasma	Cataplasma	Cataplasma
Pound	Livre	Libbra	Libra	Libra
Powder	Poudre	Polvere	Polvo	Polvora
Power	Pouvoir	Potere	Poder	Poder
Practice	Pratique	Prática	Practica	Practica
Praise	Louange	Lode	Alabanza	Louvor
Prayer	Prière	Preghiera	Oracion	Oração
Preacher	Prédicateur	Predicatore	Predicador	Pregador
Preface	Préface	Prefazio	Prefacio	Prefacio
Prejudice	Prévention	Pregiudizio	Prevencion	Prejuizo
Preserve	Confiture	Conserva	Conserva	Conserva
Pretence	Prétexte	Pretesto	Pretexto	Pretexto
Prey	Proie	Preda	Presa	Presá
Price	Prix	Prezzo	Precio	Preço
Prick	Piqûre	Puntura	Punzon	Picado
Pride	Orgueil	Orgoglio	Orgullo	Orgulho
Priest	Prêtre	Prete	Sacerdote	Sacerdote
Prince	Prince	Príncipe	Príncipe	Príncipe
Print	Impression	Stampa	Impresion	Estampa
Printer	Imprimeur	Stampatore	Impresor	Impressor
Prison	Prison	Prigione	Prision	Prisão
Privateer	Corsair	Corsale	Corsario	Corsario
Prize	Prix	Premio	Premio	Premio
Proceeding	Procédure	Procedimento	Procedimiento	Procedimento
Procession	Procession	Processione	Procesion	Procissão
Prodigy	Prodige	Prodigo	Prodigio	Prodigio
Produce	Produit	Prodotto	Producto	Producto
Professor	Professeur	Professore	Profesor	Professor
Profit	Profit	Profitto	Provecho	Proveito
Progeny	Postérité	Progenie	Progenie	Progenie

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Programme	Programme	Programma	Programa	Programma
Progress	Progrès	Progresso	Progreso	Progresso
Project	Projet	Progetto	Proyecto	Projecto
Promise	Promesse	Promessa	Promesa	Promessa
Prong	Fourche	Forca	Horca	Forcado
Pronunciation	Prononciation	Pronunzia	Pronunciacion	Pronuncia&ccedil;o
Proof	Preuve	Prova	Prueba	Prova
Prop	Étai; appui	Sostegno	Apoyo	Apoio
Property	Propriété	Proprietà	Propiedad	Propriedade
Prophecy	Prophetie	Profezia	Profecia	Prophecia
Prophet	Prophète	Profeta	Profeta	Propheta
Proposal	Proposition	Proposta	Propuesta	Proposta
Prose	Prose	Prosa	Prosa	Prosa
Prospect	Vue	Prospetto	Vista	Vista
Protest	Protêt	Protesto	Protesto	Protesto
Proverb	Proverbe	Proverbio	Proverbio	Proverbio
Province	Province; département	Provincia	Provincia	Provincia
Proxy	Procuration	Procura	Procuracion	Procura&ccedil;o
Public	Publique	Pubblico	Publico	Publico
Publican	Aubergiste	Ostiere	Mesonero	Taverneiro
Publisher	Éditeur	Pubblicatore	Publicador	Publicador
Pudding	Pouding	Podingo	Pudingo	Pudim
Pull	Secousse	Tirata	Tiron	Sacão
Pulley	Poulie	Girella	Polea	Polé
Pulpit	Chaire	Pulpito	Pulpito	Pulpito
Pulse	Pouls	Polso	Pulso	Pulso
Pump	Pompe	Pompa	Bomba	Bomba
Pun	Calembour	Scherzo di parole	Equivoco	Equivoco
Punch	Punch	Ponce	Ponche	Ponche
Punctuality	Ponctualité	Puntualità	Puntualidad	Pontualidade
Punishment	Punition	Punizione	Castigo	Puni&ccedil;o
Pupil	Élève	Pupillo	Pupilo	Pupillo

# VOCABULARY.

377

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORtUGUESE.
Purchase	Achat	Compra	Compra	Compra
Purple	Pourpre	Porporino	Purpurino	Purpura
Purpose	But ; dessein	Proposito	Intencion	Intento
Purse	Bourse	Borsa	Bolsa	Bolsa
Push	Impulsion	Spinta	Impulsion	Impulso
Puzzle	Embarras	Imbarazzo	Embarazo	Embaraço
Pyramid	Pyramide	Pirámide	Pirámide	Pyramide
Quack	Charlatan	Ciarlatano	Charlatan	Charlatão
Quail	Caille	Quaglia	Codorniz	Codorniz
Quality	Qualité	Qualità	Calidad	Qualidade
Quarrel	Querelle	Disputa	Disputa	Disputa
Quarry	Carrière	Cava	Cantera	Pedreira
Quarter	Quart	Quarto	Cuarto	Quarto
Queen	Reine	Regina	Reina	Rainha
Question	Question ; demande	Questione	Cuestion	Questão
Quickness	Vitesse	Rapidità	Presteza	Viveza
Quiet	Tranquillité	Quiete	Tranquilidad	Descanso
Quill	Plume	Penna	Pluma	Penna
Quilt	Couvre-pied	Coltre	Colcha	Colcha
Quince	Coing	Cotogna	Membrillo	Marmelo
Quinsy	Esquinancie	Squinanzia	Angina	Esquinencia
Quire	Chœur	Coro	Coro	Côro
Quits	Quitte	Pari	En paz	Pagos
Quiver	Carquois	Faretra	Carcaj	Aljava
Quoit	Palet	Disco	Tejo	Disco
Quotation	Citation	Citazione	Citacion	Citação
Rabbit	Lapin	Coniglio	Conejo	Coelho
Race	Race ; course	Razza	Raza	Raça
Rag	Chiffon	Cencio	Trapo	Trapo
Rage	Rage ; fureur	Rabbia	Rabia	Raiva

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Rail	Barre ; grille	Steccato	Baranda	Grade
Railroad	Chemin de fer	Strada di ferro	Ferro carril	Estrada de ferro
Rain	Pluie	Pioggia	Lluvia	Chuva
Raisin	Raisin sec	Uva passa	Pasa	Passa de uva
Ramrod	Baguette	Bacchetta da schioppo	Baqueta	Vareta
Random	Hasard	Caso	Ventura	Acaso
Rank	Rang	Grado	Grado	Grao
Rascal	Coquin	Briccone	Pícaro	Velhaco
Raspberry	Framboise	Lampone	Frambuesa	Frambesia
Rat	Rat	Ratto ; sorcio	Rata	Rato
Rate	Taux	Rata	Razon	Razão
Raven	Corbeau	Corvo	Cuervo	Corvo
Rawness	Crudité	Crudezza	Crudeza	Crueza
Ray	Rayon	Raggio	Rayo	Raio
Razor	Rasoir	Rasojo	Navaja	Navalha
Reading	Lecture	Lettura	Leccion	Leitura
Reaping	Moisson	Raccolta	Cosecha	Sega
Rear	Arrière	Di dietro	Retaguardia	Retaguarda
Reason	Raison	Ragione	Razon	Razão
Rebel	Rebelle	Ribello	Rebelde	Rebelde
Rebuke	Réprimande	Rimprovero	Repreension	Reprehensão
Receipt	Réception ; quittance	Ricevuta	Recibo	Recibo
Recess	Alcôve	Alcova	Retiro	Recesso
Reckoning	Compte	Cálculo	Cuenta	Conta
Recognition	Reconnaissance	Riconoscione	Reconocimiento	Reconhecimento
Recollection	Souvenir	Rimembranza	Recuerdo	Lembrança
Recompense	Compensation	Ricompenza	Recompensa	Recompensa
Record	Registre	Registro	Registro	Registro
Recovery	Guérison	Guarigione	Restablecimiento	Convalecença
Recruit	Recrue	Recluta ; conscritto	Recluta	Recruta
Red	Rouge	Rosso	Rojo	Vermelho
Reed	Roseau	Canna	Caña	Canna

# VOCABULARY.

379

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Reference	Renseignement	Riferenza	Referencia	Informação
Refining	Raffinage	Il raffinare	Refinadura	Refinamento
Refreshment	Refraîchissement	Rinfresco	Refresco	Refresco
Refusal	Refus	Rifiuto	Negativa	Repulsa
Regiment	Régiment	Reggimento	Regimiento	Regimento
Region	Région	Regione	Region	Região
Register	Registre	Registro	Registro	Registro
Regret	Regret	Rincrescimento	Arrepentimiento	Pezar
Rehearsal	Récitation	Recitazione	Recitacion	Repetição
Reimbursement	Remboursement	Rimborso	Reembolso	Reembolso
Reins	Guides	Rédine	Rienda	Redeas
Relapse	Rechute	Ricaduta	Recaida	Recahida
Relations	Parents	Parenti	Parientes	Parentes
Release	Relâchement	Liberazione	Soltura	Soltura
Reliance	Confiance	Confidenza	Confianza	Confiança
Relief	Soulagement	Sollievo	Allivio	Allivio
Relish	Goût	Gusto	Gusto	Gosto
Reluctance	Répugnance	Ripugnanza	Repugnancia	Repugnancia
Remainder	Reste	Resto	Resto	Resto
Remark	Remarque	Osservazione	Observacion	Observação
Remedy	Remède	Rimedio	Remedio	Remedio
Remittance	Remise	Rimessa	Remesa	Remessa
Removal	Déménagement	Cangiamento di luogo	Remocion	Mudança
Renewal	Renouvellement	Rinovamento	Renovacion	Renovação
Renown	Renommée	Fama	Fama	Fama
Rent	Rente	Rendita	Renta	Renda
Repair	Réparation	Riparazione	Reparacion	Reparação
Reply	Réponse	Risposta	Replica	Replica
Report	Rapport	Rapporto	Relacion	Relação
Repose	Repos	Riposo	Reposo	Reposo
Reproach	Reproche	Rimprovero	Reconvencion	Reprehensão
Repulse	Échec	Ripulsa	Repulsa	Repulsa

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Request	Requête	Richiesta	Ruego	Rogo
Rescue	Délivrance	Liberazione	Libramiento	Livramento
Resin	Résine	Resina	Resina	Resina
Respect	Respect	Rispetto	Respecto	Respeito
Rest	Reste; repos	Resto; riposo	Resto; reposo	Resto; repouso
Retail	Détail	A minuto	Al menudeo	Por miudo
Retreat	Retraite	Ritiro	Retiro	Retiro
Return	Retour	Ritorno	Retorno	Retorno
Revenge	Revanche	Vendetta	Venganza	Vingança
Revenue	Revenu	Réndita	Renta	Renda
Reverse	Revers	Rovescio	Reves	Revez
Review	Revue	Rivista	Revista	Revista
Ringlet	Boucle	Riccio	Bucle	Annel
Riot	Tumulte	Tumulto	Tumulto	Tumulto
Ripeness	Maturité	Maturità	Madurez	Madureza
Risk	Risque; péril	Rischio	Riesgo	Risco
River	Fleuve; rivière	Fiume	Rio	Rio
Road	Route; chemin	Strada	Camino	Caminho
Roar	Rugissement	Ruggito	Rugido	Rugido
Robber	Voleur	Ladro	Ladron	Ladrão
Robe	Robe	Toga; roba	Toga	Toga
Rock	Rocher	Rocca	Roca	Roca
Rod	Verge	Verga	Verga	Vara
Rogue	Coquin; fripon	Furbo	Bribon	Velhaco
Roll	Rouleau	Rótolo	Rol	Rolo
Roman	Romain	Romano	Romano	Romano
Romance	Roman	Romanzo	Romance	Romance
Roof	Toit	Tetto	Techo	Tecto
Room	Chambre	Cámera; stanza	Cuarto	Sala
Root	Racine	Radice	Raiz	Raiz
Rope	Corde	Corda	Cuerda	Corda
Rose	Rose	Rosa	Rosa	Rosa

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Roughness	Âpreté	Asprezza	Aspereza	Aspereza
Rub	Frottement	Spazzolata	Frotamiento	Fricção
Rudder	Gouvernail	Timone	Timon	Leme
Rudeness	Rudesse	Ruvidezza	Rudeza	Rudeza
Rug	Tapis	Tappeto	Tapete	Picote
Ruin	Ruine	Ruina	Ruina	Ruina
Rumour	Rumeur	Romore	Rumor	Rumor
Runner	Coureur	Corridore	Corredor	Corredor
Rush	Jonc	Giunco	Junco	Junco
Rust	Rouillure	Ruggine	Orin	Ferrugem
Sabbath	Sabbat	Sábatu	Sábado	Sabbado
Sack	Sac	Sacco	Saco	Saco
Saddle	Selle	Sella	Silla	Sella
Safety	Sûreté	Sicurtà	Seguridad	Segurança
Saffron	Safran	Zafferano	Azafran	Açafrão
Sago	Sagou	Sago	Sagui	Sagú
Sail	Voile	Vela	Vela	Vela
Sailor	Marin ; matelot	Marinaio	Marinero	Marinheiro
Saint	Saint	Santo	Santo	Santo
Salad	Salade	Insalata	Ensalada	Salada
Salary	Salaire	Salario	Salario	Salario
Sale	Vente	Vendita	Venta	Venda
Salmon	Saumon	Salmone	Salmon	Salmão
Saloon	Salon	Salone	Salon	Salão
Salt	Sel	Sale	Sal	Sal
Saltpetre	Saltpêtre	Salnitro	Nitro	Nitro
Salute	Salut	Saluto	Salutacion	Saudação
Salve	Onguent	Unguento	Unguento	Unguento
Sample.	Échantillon	Campione	Muestra	Amostra
Sand	Sable	Sabbia	Arena	Areia
Sap	Sève	Sugo	Savia	Seve

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Sash	Ceinture	Cintura	Cinta	Cinta
Satin	Satin	Raso	Raso	Setim
Saturday	Samedi	Sábato	Sábado	Sabbado
Sauce	Sauce	Salsa	Salsa	Môlho
Saucer	Soucoupe	Piattino (di tazza)	Salsera	Pires
Savage	Sauvage	Selvaggio	Salvaje	Selvagem
Saving	Économia	Economia	Economia	Economia
Saviour	Sauveur	Salvatore	Salvador	Salvador
Saw	Scie	Sega	Sierra	Serra
Scabbard	Fourreau	Fódero	Vaina	Bainha
Scaffold	Échaffaud	Palco	Patibulo	Cadafalso
Scale	Échelle; écaille	Scala; scaglia	Escala	Escala
Scandal	Scandale	Scandalo	Escândalo	Escandalo
Scar	Cicatrice	Cicatrice	Cicatriz	Cicatriz
Scarf	Écharpe'	Ciarpa	Banda	Manta
Scarlet	Écarlate	Scarlatto	Escarlata	Escarlata
Scate (or skate)	Patin	Pattino	Patin	Chapim
Scene	Scène	Scena	Escena	Scena
Scent	Odeur; parfum	Odore	Olor	Cheiro
Scheme	Projet	Progetto	Proyecto	Projecto
Scholar	Écolier; savant	Scolare	Estudiante	Estudante
School	École	Scuola	Escuela	Escola
Scolding	Gronderie	Il rampognare	El regañar	O renhir
Scorn	Mépris	Sdegno	Desden	Dessdem
Scoundrel	Scélérat	Briccone	Bribon	Velhaco
Scout	Védette	Esploratore	Explorador	Batedor
Scraping	Grattage	Raschiatura	El raspar	O raspar
Scratch	Égratignure	Graffiatura	Rascadura	Arranhadura
Scream	Cri perçant	Grido	Grito	Grito
Screen	Écran; paravent	Parafuoco	Biombo	Anteparo

# VOCABULARY.

383

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Screw	Vis	Vite	Tornillo	Parafuso
Scripture	Écriture	Scrittura	Escritura	Escritura
Sculptor	Sculpteur	Scultore	Escultor	Escultor
Scythe	Faux	Falce	Guadaña	Fouce
Sea	Mer	Mare	Mar	Mar
Sea-sickness	Mal de mer	Mal di mare	Mareo	Enjôo
Seal	Sceau	Sigillo	Sello	Sello
Search	Recherche	Ricerca	Busca	Busca
Season	Saison	Stagione	Estacion	Estação
Seat	Siége	Sedia	Asiento	Assento
Secret	Secret	Segreto	Secreto	Segredo
Secretary	Secrétaire	Segretario	Secretario	Secretario
Seed	Semence ; graine	Seme	Semilla	Semente
Selection	Choix ; recueil	Scelta	Selección	Seleção
Selfishness	Égoïsme	Egoismo	Egoísmo	Egoísmo
Senior	Aîné	Seniore	Anciano ; senior	Ancião ; velho
Sense	Sens ; esprit	Senso	Sentido	Sentido
Sentence	Sentence	Sentenza	Sentencia	Sentença
Sentinel	Sentinelle	Sentinella	Centinela	Sentinella
September	Septembre	Settembre	Setiembre	Septembro
Sermon	Sermon	Sermone	Sermon	Sermão
Serpent	Serpent	Serpente	Serpiente	Serpente
Servant	Domestique	Servo	Criado	Criado
Service	Service	Servizio	Servicio	Serviço
Setter (dog)	Chien couchant	Cane da caccia	Perro de muestra	Perdigueiro
Settlement	Réglement	Regolamento	Acomodo	Ajuste
Sex	Sexe	Sesso	Sexo	Sexo
Shade	Ombre	Ombra	Sombra	Sombra
Shake	Secousse	Scossa	Sacudida	Abalo
Shame	Honte	Vergogna	Vergüenza	Vergonha
Shape	Forme	Forma	Forma	Forma
Share	Portion	Porzione	Porcion	Parte

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Shark	Requin	Pesce cane	Tiburon	Tubarão
Shaving	Action de raser	Il rádere	El afeitar	O barbear
Sheep	Mouton	Montone	Oveja ; carnero	Carneiro
Sheet	Drap	Lenuzolo	Sábana	Lencol
Shelf	Planche	Scoglio ; banco	Estante	Estante
Shell	Coquille ; écorce	Conca	Concha	Concha
Shepherd	Berger	Pastore	Pastor	Pastor
Shield	Bouclier	Scudo	Escudo	Escudo
Ship	Navire	Bastimento	Navio	Navio
Shipwreck	Naufrage	Naufragio	Naufragio	Naufragio
Shirt	Chemise	Camicia	Camisa	Camisa
Shiver	Frisonnement	Trémoto	Tremblor	Tremor
Shoe	Soulier	Scarpa	Zapato	Sapato
Shop	Magasin	Bottega	Tienda	Loja
Shore	Côte ; rive	Lido	Costa	Costa
Shot	Plomb ; balle	Palla	Municion ; tiro	Chumbo ; tiro
Shoulder	Épaule	Spalla	Espalda ; hombro	Espalda ; hombro
Show	Spectacle ; parade	Spettacolo	Espectáculo	Espectaculo
Shower	Averse	Pioggia	Lluvia	Chuva
Shyness	Timidité	Timidità	Reserva	Reserva
Sickness	Maladie	Malattia	Enfermedad	Doença
Side	Côté	Fianco ; lato	Lado	Lado
Sideboard	Buffet	Buffetto	Aparador	Aparador
Sieve	Crible	Crivello	Cribo	Peneira
Sigh	Soupir	Sospiro	Suspiro	Suspiro
Sight	Vision ; vue	Vista	Vista	Vista
Sign	Signe	Segno	Signo	Signo
Signal	Signal	Segnale	Señal	Signal
Signature	Signature	Firma	Firma	Firma
Silence	Silence	Silenzio	Silencio	Silencio
Silk	Soie	Seta	Seda	Seda
Silver	Argent	Argento	Plata	Prata

# VOCABULARY.

385

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Sin	Péché	Peccato	Pecado	Peccado
Singer	Chanteur	Cantatore	Cantor	Cantor
Sister	Sœur	Sorella	Hermana	Irmãa
Size	Grandeur	Grandezza	Tamaño	Grandeza
Skeleton	Squelette	Schéletro	Esqueleto	Esqueleto
Skill	Adresse ; habilité	Abilità	Habilidad	Habilidade
Skin	Peau	Pelle	Piel	Pelle
Skull	Crâne	Cranio	Craneo	Craneo
Sky	Ciel	Cielo	Cielo	Céo
Slander	Calomnie	Calunnia	Calumnia	Calumnia
Slave	Esclave	Schiavo	Esclavo	Escravo
Sleep	Sommeil	Sonno	Sueño	Sono
Sleeve	Manche	Mánica	Manga	Manga
Slipper	Pantoufle	Scarpa	Chinela ; zapato	Chinela
Slowness	Lenteur	Lentezza	Lentitud	Vagar
Smell	Odeur ; parfum	Odore	Olor	Cheiro
Smile	Souris	Sorriso	Sonrisa	Sorriso
Smoke	Fumée	Fumo	Humo	Fumo
Smuggler	Contrebandier	Contrabbandiere	Contrabandista	Contrabandista
Snake	Serpent	Serpente	Serpiente	Cobra
Snipe	Bécassine	Beccaccino	Agachadiza	Narseja
Snow	Neige	Neve	Nieve	Neve
Snuff	Tabac	Tabacco	Tabaco	Tabaco
Soap	Savon	Sapone	Jabon	Sabão
Softness	Mollesse	Mollezza	Blandura	Brandura
Soldier	Soldat	Soldato	Soldado	Soldado
Sole	Plante	Pianta	Planta	Planta
Solitariness	Solitude	Solitudine	Soledad	Soledade
Son	Fils	Figlio	Hijo	Filho
Song	Chant	Canto	Cancion	Cantiga
Sore	Plaie	Piaga	Llaga	Chaga
Sorrow	Chagrin	Tristezza	Pesar	Pezar

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Sort	Sorte	Sorta	Suerte	Sorte
Soul	Âme	Ânima	Alma	Alma
Sound	Son	Suono	Son	Som
Soup	Soupe	Zuppa	Sopa	Sopa
Sourness	Aigreur	Agrezza	Agrio	Acido
South	Sud	Sud	Sur	Sul
Space	Espace	Spazio	Espacio	Espaço
Spade	Bêche ; pique	Vanga ; picche	Azada ; espada	Pá ; espada
Spaniard	Espagnol	Spagnuolo	Español	Hespanhol
Spark	Étincelle	Scintilla	Chispa	Scintilla
Sparrow	Moineau	Passero	Gorrion	Pardal
Spasm	Spasme	Spasimo	Espasmo	Espasmo
Speaker	Orateur	Oratore	Orador	Orador
Spear	Lance	Lancia	Lanza	Lança
Spectacles	Lunettes	Occhiali	Anteojos	Oculos
Speed	Vitesse	Rapidità	Presteza	Pressa
Spending	Dépense	Spesa	Gasto	Gasto
Spice	Épice	Spezie	Especio	Especiaria
Spit	Broche	Spiedo	Asador	Espeto
Sponge	Éponge	Spugna	Esponja	Esponja
Spoon	Cuiller	Cucchiajo	Cuchara	Colher
Sport	Jeu ; chasse	Gioco ; caccia	Juego ; caza	Divertimento ; caça
Spot	Tache	Macchia	Mancha	Mancha
Spring	Printemps	Primavera	Primavera	Primavera
Spur	Éperon	Spreno	Espuela	Espora
Spy	Espion	Spione	Espia	Espia
Square	Place	Piazza	Plaza	Praça
Stab	Coup (de)	Pugnalata	Puñalada	Punhalada
Stable	Écurie	Stalla	Establo	Estrebaria
Stag	Cerf	Cervo	Ciervo	Veado
Stage	Échafaud ; scène	Palco	Plancha ; tablado	Estalagem ; tablado

# VOCABULARY.

387

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Stain	Tache	Macchia	Mancha	Mancha
Stair	Escalier	Scala	Escalera	Escada
Stamp	Timbre	Bollo	Sello	Sello
Star	Étoile	Stella	Estrella	Estrella
Start	Tressaillement	Salto	Sobresalto	Salto
State	État	Stato	Estado	Estado
Station	Station	Stazione	Estacion	Estação
Steam	Vapeur	Vapore	Vapor	Vapor
Steel	Acier	Acciajo	Acero	Aço
Step	Pas; degré	Passo	Paso	Passo
Stick	Bâton	Bastone	Baston	Pão
Stiffness	Raideur	Rigidezza	Rigidez	Rigidez
Stillness	Calme	Calma	Calma	Tranquilidade
Sting	Piqûre	Puntura	Picadura	Ferrão
Stirrup	Étrier	Staffa	Estríbo	Estríbo
Stocking	Bas	Calza	Media	Meia
Stomach	Estomac	Stómaco	Estómago	Estomago
Stone	Pierre	Pietra	Piedra	Pedra
Store	Dépôt	Deposito	Almacen	Armazem
Storm	Orage	Tempesta	Tempestad	Tempestade
Story	Histoire; étage	Storia; piano	Historia; piso	Historia; andar
Stove	Étuve	Stufa	Estufa	Estufa
Straw	Paille	Paglia	Paja	Palha
Strawberry	Fraise	Frágola	Fresa	Morango
Street	Rue	Strada	Calle	Rua
Strength	Force	Forza	Fuerza	Força
String	Corde	Cordicella	Cuerda	Corda
Stroke	Coup	Colpo	Golpe	Golpe
Study	Étude	Studio	Estudio	Estudo
Stuff	Étoffe	Stoffa	Estofa	Estofo
Subject	Sujet	Soggetto; suddito	Sujeto	Sujeito

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Subscription	Souscription	Soscrizione	Suscripcion	Subscrição
Success	Succès	Successo	Suceso	Successo
Suet	Suif	Sugna	Sebo	Sebo
Sufferer	Victime	Vittima	Sufridor	Soffredor
Sugar	Sucré	Zucchero	Azucar	Assucar
Sulphur	Soufre	Zolfo	Azufre	Enxofre
Sum	Somme	Somma	Suma	Somma
Summer	Été	Estate	Verano	Verão
Summons	Sommation	Citazione	Citacion	Citação
Sun	Soleil	Sole	Sol	Sol
Sunday	Dimanche	Domenica	Domingo	Domingo
Supper	Souper	Cena	Cena	Cêa
Supply	Provision	Provvisione	Provision	Provisão
Survey	Inspection	Ispezione	Inspecion	Inspecção
Suspicion	Soupçon	Sospetto	Sospecha	Suspeita
Swan	Cygne	Cigno	Cisne	Cisne
Sweetness	Douceur	Dolcezza	Dulzura	Doçura
Swiftness	Rapidité	Rapidità	Rapidez	Rapidez
Swimmer	Nageur	Nuotatore	Nadador	Nadador
Sword	Épée	Spada	Espada	Espada
Table	Table	Távola	Mesa	Mesa
Tail	Queue	Coda	Cola	Cauda
Tailor	Tailleur	Sarto	Sastre	Alfaiate
Tale	Histoire	Conto	Cuenta	Conto
Talk	Causerie	Discorso	Conversacion	Falla
Tallow	Suif	Sevo	Sebo	Sebo
Taste	Goût	Gusto	Gusto	Gosto
Tavern	Auberge	Albergo	Meson	Taverna
Tax	Impôt	Tassa	Impuesto	Imposto
Tea	Thé	Té	Té	Chá
Tear	Larme	Lágrima	Lágrima	Lagrima

# VOCABULARY.

389

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Temper	Humeur	Umore	Genio	Genio
Tempest	Tempête	Tempesta	Tempestad	Tempestade
Temple	Temple ; tempe	Tempio	Templo ; sien	Templo
Tenant	Locataire	Locatario	Arrendador	Rendeiro
Tenderness	Tendresse	Tenerezza	Ternura	Ternura
Tent	Pavillon	Tenda	Pabellon	Tenda
Term	Terme	Términe	Término	Termo
Terrace	Terrasse	Terrazzo	Terrado	Terraço
Testimonial	Certificat	Certificato	Certificado	Certificado
Thanks	Remerciments	Grazie	Gracias	Graças
Theatre	Théâtre ; spectacle	Teatro	Teatro	Theatro
Thickness	Épaisseur	Grossezza	Espesura	Espessura
Thief	Voleur	Ladro	Ladron	Ladrão
Thimble	Dé	Ditale	Dedal	Dedal
Thirst	Soif	Sété	Sed	Sede
Thorn	Épine	Spina	Espina	Espinho
Thought	Pensée	Pensiero	Pensamiento	Pensamento
Thread	Fil	Filo	Hilo	Fio
Threat	Menace	Minaccia	Amenaza	Ameaça
Throat	Gorge	Gola	Garganta	Garganta
Throne	Trône	Trono	Trono	Throno
Thumb	Pouce	Póllice	Pulgar	Pollegar
Thunder	Tonnerre	Tuono	Trueno	Trovão
Ticket	Billet	Biglietto	Billete	Bilhete
Tide	Courant ; flux	Marea	Marea	Maré
Tiger	Tigre	Tigre	Tigre	Tigre
Tightness	Raideur	Strettezza	Tension	Estreiteza
Tile	Tuile	Tegola	Teja	Telha
Timber	Bois	Legname	Madera	Madeira
Time	Temps ; heure	Tempo ; ora	Tiempo ; hora	Tempo ; hora
Tin	Étain ; fer-blanc	Stagno	Estanho	Estanho ; lata

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Title	Titre	Titolo	Titulo	Titulo
Toad	Crapaud	Rospo	Sapo	Sapo
Toast	Santé	Brindisi	Brindis	Brinde
Toe	Doigt	Dito del pie	Dedo del pié	Dedo do pé
Tomb	Tomeau	Tomba	Tumba	Sepultura
Ton	Tonneau	Tonnellata	Tonelada	Tonelada
Tongs	Pincettes	Mollette	Tenaza	Tenaz
Tongue	Langue	Lingua	Lengua	Lingua
Tool	Outil ; instrument	Stromento	Apero	Instrumento
Tooth	Dent	Dente	Diente	Dente
Top	Sommet ; dessus	Cima ; il di sopra	Cima	Cima
Torch	Flambeau	Torcia	Hacha	Tocha
Touch	Touche	Tocco	Tocamiento	Tocamento
Tow	Filasse	Stoppa	Estopa	Estopa
Tower	Tour	Torre	Torre	Torre
Town	Ville	Città	Ciudad	Cidade
Toy	Jouet	Trastullo	Juguete	Brinco
Trade	Commerce	Commercio	Comercio	Commercio
Tradesman	Marchand	Mercante	Mercader	Mercador
Tragedy	Tragédie	Tragedia	Tragedia	Tragedia
Train	Train ; convoi	Treno	Tren	Trem
Traitor	Traître	Traditore	Traidor	Traidor
Translation	Traduction	Traduzione	Traducion	Traducção
Trap	Trappe	Trappola	Trampa	Trapa
Travel	Voyage	Viaggio	Viaje	Viagem
Tray	Auge	Vassojo	Bandeja	Bandeja
Treasure	Trésor	Tesoro	Tesoro	Thesouro
Tree	Arbre	Álbero	Arbol	Arvore
Trembling	Tremblement	Tremante	Temblante	Tremulo
Trial	Essai ; procès	Prova	Prueba	Prova
Tribe	Tribù	Tribù	Tribu	Tribu
Trick	Ruse	Scherzo ; furberia	Engaño	Engano

# VOCABULARY.

391

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTUGUESE.
Trifle	Bagatelle	Bagatella	Bagatela	Bagatela
Triumph	Triomphe	Triunfo	Triunfo	Triumpho
Troop	Troupe	Truppa	Tropa	Tropa
Tropic	Tropique	Trópico	Tropico	Tropicó
Trouble	Chagrin	Afflizione	Aficion	Afflicção
Truce	Tréve	Tregua	Tregua	Tregoa
Trump (cards)	Atout	Trionfo	Triunfo	Trunfo
Trumpet	Trompette	Tromba	Trompeta	Trombeta
Trunk	Tronc	Tronco	Tronco	Tronco
Trust	Confiance	Fiducia	Confianza	Confiança
Trustee	Commissaire	Curatore	Curador	Curador
Tub	Cuve	Tino	Cubo	Cuba
Tube	Tube	Tubo	Tubo	Tubo
Tug	Remorqueur	Rimorchio	Remolcador	Rebocador
Tulip	Tulipe	Tulipano	Tulipa	Tulipa
Tune	Air	Aria	Aria	Aria
Tunnel	Tonnelle	Tonnello	Camino subterraneo	Caminho subterraneo
Turcen	Soupière	Zuppiera	Sopera	Sopeira
Turf	Gazon	Torba	Cesped	Relva
Turn	Tour	Giro	Vuelta	Volta
Turnip	Navet	Navone	Nabo	Nabo
Turtle	Tortue	Tartaruga	Tortuga	Tartaruga
Tusk	Canine	Sanna	Colmillo	Dente
Tutor	Gouverneur	Tutore	Tutor	Tutor
Twilight	Crépuscule	Crepusculo	Crepusculo	Crepusculo
Twin	Jumeau	Gemello	Gemelo	Gemeo
Twine	Ficelle	Spago	Hilo	Fio
Tyrant	Tyran	Tiranno	Tirano	Tyranno
Ugliness	Laideur	Brutezza	Fealdad	Fealdade
Umbrella	Parapluie	Ombrello	Paraguas	Chapeo de sol
Umpire	Arbitre	Arbitro	Arbitro	Arbitro

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORTEGUESE.
Understanding	Intelligence	Intelligenza	Inteligencia	Inteligencia
Uneasiness	Inquiétude	Inquietudine	Inquietud	Inquietação
Union	Union ; accord	Unione ; accordo	Union	União
Urgency	Urgence	Bisogno	Urgencia	Urgencia
Use	Usage	Uso	Uso	Uso
Usefulness	Utilité	Utilità	Utilidad	Utilidade
Utmost	Extrême	Estremo	Extremo	Extremo
Vacancy	Vide	Vacuo	Vacio	Vazio
Value	Valeur	Valore	Valor	Valor
Valve	Valve	Valva	Válvula	Valvula
Vapour	Vapeur	Vapore	Vapor	Vapor
Varnish	Vernis	Vernice	Barniz	Verniz
Vase	Vase	Vaso	Vaso	Vaso
Vault	Voute	Volta	Bóveda	Abóbada
Vegetable	Légume	Vegetale	Legumbre	Legume
Veil	Voile	Velo	Velo	Véo
Vein	Veine	Vena	Vena	Vêa
Velvet	Velours	Velluto	Terciopelo	Velludo
Vent	Issue	Uscita	Salida	Fresta
Venture	Hasard	Ventura	Ventura	Ventura
Verse	Vers	Verso	Verso	Verso
Vessel (ship)	Vaisseau	Bastimento	Buque	Navio
Vice	Vice	Vizio	Vicio	Vicio
Viceroy	Viceroi	Vicerè	Virey	Vice-rei
Vicinity	Voisinage	Vicinanza	Vecindad	Vizinhança
Victim	Victime	Vittima	Victima	Victima
View	Vue	Vista	Vista	Vista
Village	Village	Villaggio	Aldea	Aldêa
Villain	Scélérat	Scellerato	Bellaco	Villão
Vine	Vigne	Vite	Vid	Videira
Violin	Violon	Violino	Violin	Violino

# VOCABULARY

393

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Virgin	Vierge	Vérgine	Virgen	Virgem
Visit	Visite	Visita	Visita	Visita
Visitor	Visiteur	Visitatore	Visitador	Visitador
Voice	Voix	Voce	Voz	Voz
Volume	Volume ; tome	Volume	Volumen	Volume
Vote	Vote ; suffrage	Voto	Voto	Voto
Voyage	Voyage	Viaggio	Viaje	Viagem
Vulture	Vautour	Avoltojo	Buitre	Abutre
Wadding	Bourre	Stoppaccio	Taco	Buxa
Wafer	Hostie	Ostia	Oblea	Obrêa
Wager	Pari	Scommessa	Apuesta	Aposta
Wages	Gages	Paga	Paga	Paga
Waist	Taille	Vita	Cintura	Cintura
Waistcoat	Gilet	Giubbetto	Chupa	Veste
Waiter	Garçon	Cameriere	Mozo	Mogo
Waking	Veille	Veglia	Vela	Vela
Walk	Promenade	Passeggio	Paseo	Passeio
Wall	Mur	Muro	Muro ; pared	Muro ; parede
Walnut	Noix	Noce	Nuez	Noz
Wand	Bâton	Verga	Vara	Vara
Want	Manque	Mancanza	Falta	Falta
War	Guerre	Guerra	Guerra	Guerra
Warehouse	Magasin	Magazzino	Almacen	Almazem
Warmth	Chaleur	Caldo	Calor	Calor
Warning	Avis	Avviso	Aviso	Aviso
Wash	Lavage	Lavamento	Lavadura	Lavagem
Wasp	Guêpe	Vespa	Avispa	Abelhão
Waste	Gaspillage	Scialacquamento	Despilfarro	Estrago
Watch	Veille ; montre	Veglia ; orologio	Vela ; muestra	Vela ; relogio
Watchman	Sentinelle	Guardia	Guarda	Guarda
Water	Eau	Acqua	Agua	Agua

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORtUGUESE.
Wave	Vague	Onda	Onda	Onda
Wax	Cire	Cera	Cera	Cera
Way	Chemin	Cammino	Camino	Caminho
Weakness	Faiblesse	Debolezza	Debilidad	Debilidade
Wealth	Ricchezze	Ricchezza	Riqueza	Riqueza
Weapon	Arme	Arma	Arma	Arma
Wear	Usage	Uso	Uso	Uso
Weather	Temps	Tempo	Tiempo	Tempo
Web	Toile	Tela	Tela	Téa
Wedding	Mariage	Nozze	Casamiento	Casamento
Wednesday	Mercredi	Mercoledì	Miércoles	Quarta feira
Week	Semaine	Settimana	Semana	Semana
Weight	Poids	Peso	Peso	Peso
Welcome	Bienvenue	Ben venuto	Bienvenido	Bem vindo
Well	Source ; puits	Pozzo	Pozo	Poco
West	Ouest	Occidente	Occidente	Occidente
Wet	Humidité	Umidità	Humedad	Humidade
Whale	Baleine	Balena	Ballena	Balêa
Wharf	Quai	Molo	Muelle	Caes
Wheat	Blé	Grano	Trigo	Trigo
Wheel	Roue	Ruota	Rueda	Roda
Whim	Caprice	Capriccio	Capricho	Capricho
Whip	Fouet	Frusta	Azote	Açoute
Whiskers	Favoris	Favorite	Bigotes	Bigodes
Whistle	Siflet	Fischio	Silbido	Assobio
White	Blanc	Bianco	Blanco	Branco
Whole	Ensemble	Total	Total	Total
Wickedness	Méchanceté	Cattiveria	Maldad	Maldade
Widow	Veuve	Védoña	Viuda	Viúva
Width	Largeur	Larghezza	Anchura	Largura
Wife	Femme	Moglie	Esposa	Esposa
Wig	Perruque	Parrucca	Peluca	Cabellera

## VOCABULARY.

## ENGLISH.

Will  
Willow  
Wind  
Winding  
Window  
Wine  
Wing  
Wink  
Winter  
Wire  
Wisdom  
Wish  
Wit  
Witch  
Witness  
Woman  
Wonder  
Wood  
Wool  
Word  
Work  
Workman  
World  
Worm  
Worship  
Worth  
Wound  
Wrapper  
Wreath  
Wreck  
Wrestling  
Wretch

## FRENCH.

Volonté; testament  
Saule  
Vent  
Détour  
Fenêtre  
Vin  
Aile  
Clin d'œil  
Hiver  
Fil  
Sagesse  
Souhait  
Esprit  
Sorcière  
Témoin  
Femme  
Étonnement  
Bois  
Laine  
Mot  
Travail  
Ouvrier  
Monde  
Ver  
Culte  
Valeur  
Blessure  
Enveloppe  
Guirlande  
Naufrage  
Lutte  
Misérable

## ITALIAN.

Volontà; testamento  
Salice  
Vento  
Sinuosità  
Finestra

## SPANISH.

Voluntad; testamento  
Sauce  
Viento  
Vuelta  
Ventana

## PORTUGUESE.

Vontade; testamento  
Salgueiro  
Vento  
Volta  
Janella

## VOCABULARY.

ENGLISH.	FRENCH.	ITALIAN.	SPANISH.	PORUGUESE.
Wrist	Poignet	Carpo	Muñeca	Munheca
Writing	Écriture	Scrittura	Escrutura	Escritura
Wrong	Tort	Torto	Culpa	Semrazão
Yawn	Bâillement	Sbadiglie	Bostezo	Bocejo
Year	An ; année	Anno	Año	Anno
Yellow	Jaune	Giallo	Amarillo	Amarelo
Yoke	Joug	Giogo	Yugo	Jugo
Youth	Jeunesse	Gioventù	Juventud	Mocidade
Zebra	Zèbre	Zebra	Cebra	Zebra

THE END.